

## Contents

<i>Preface</i>	xi
<i>Guide to Sanskrit Pronunciation</i>	xiii
<b>Part I. INTRODUCTION</b>	
INTRODUCTION	3
ABOUT THE TRANSLATION	44
<b>Part II. THE RĀMĀYAṆA OF VĀLMĪKI</b>	
1. THE BĀLAKĀṆḌA	51
2. THE AYODHYĀKĀṆḌA	130
3. THE ARANYAKĀṆḌA	264
4. THE KIṢKINDHĀKĀṆḌA	351
5. THE SUNDARAKĀṆḌA	429
6. THE YUDDHAKĀṆḌA	537
7. THE UTTARAKĀṆḌA	728
<i>Glossary of Important Sanskrit Words, Proper Nouns, and Epithets</i>	857
<i>Glossary of Weapons</i>	867
<i>Bibliography</i>	869
<i>Index</i>	873

## Introduction

### *What Is the Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa?*

When contemplating a reading of the Vālmiki *Rāmāyaṇa*, it might well occur to a reader unfamiliar with the work to ask, “What is a *Rāmāyaṇa*, and who or what is Vālmiki?” If one were to be told that *Rāmāyaṇa* is the title of a famous and influential Sanskrit epic poem of ancient India, that Vālmiki is the name of its author, and that the work is in many ways similar to epic poems like the *Iliad*, the *Odyssey*, and the *Aeneid*, one might then ask, “Why don’t we refer to these latter works as ‘The Homer *Iliad*,’ ‘The Homer *Odyssey*,’ and ‘The Virgil *Aeneid*?’” And thereby hangs a tale—or rather, many, many versions of the same tale.

The name *Rāmāyaṇa*, “Rāma’s Journey,” is actually a generic term that, over the last two and a half millennia, came to be applied, either specifically or generically, to the innumerable versions of the epic’s central story that proliferated across the vast geographical, linguistic, cultural, and religious range of southern Asia from antiquity to the present day. The collectivity of these versions in poetry, prose, song, drama, cinema, and the visual arts is sometimes referred to as the *Rāmakathā*, “The Tale of Rāma.” Thus, although specific versions of the tale, such as those found in Sanskrit and many other languages, may use the term *Rāmāyaṇa* in their titles, many others do not. Indeed, the massive diffusion of texts, art, and performance based on the Rāma story found throughout the nations of southern Asia makes the *Rāmāyaṇa*, writ large, arguably one of the world’s most popular, influential, and widely circulated tales ever told. In this it can only be compared with two works that have been equally pervasive and influential, but far less variable and religiously adaptable—the Bible and the Qur’an.

The oldest surviving version of the great tale of Rāma, and the one that is doubtless the direct or indirect source of all of the hundreds and perhaps thousands of other versions of the story, is the monumental, mid-first millennium BCE epic poem in some twenty-five thousand Sanskrit couplets attributed to Vālmiki. In several respects this poem is also, as we shall see, unique among all versions of the tale.

In its own preface the text calls itself by three titles: *Rāma’s Journey* (*rāmāyaṇam*), *The Great Tale of Sitā* (*sitāyāś caritaṃ mahat*), and *The Slaying of Paulastya* (i.e., Rāvaṇa) (*paulastyavadhaḥ*). The first title reflects the salience in the story of its hero, while the second features its heroine and the third its villain. In modernity, in order to distinguish this work from its legion of later versions, many of which are called simply *Rāmāyaṇa*, scholars and others tend to name it for its author. Thus, in keeping with Sanskrit’s predilection for nominal compounds, the poem is often referred to in that language as the *Vālmikīrāmāyaṇa*, “Vālmiki’s

*Rāmāyaṇa*.” In English we tend to separate the two parts of the compound: the name of the author and the name of his work.

Like other *Rāmāyaṇas*, Vālmiki’s work purports to be a poetic history of events that took place on the Indian subcontinent and on the adjacent island of Laṅkā (popularly believed to be the modern nation of Sri Lanka). Indeed, along with its reputation as a great literary composition, and like its sister epic, the *Mahābhārata*, it is regarded by numerous Indian commentators, as well as by the Indian literary critical tradition and many pious Hindus today, as belonging to the genre of *itihāsa*, “historical narrative.” Also like the *Mahābhārata*, but unlike most other versions of the Rāma story, Vālmiki’s epic is believed to be the work of a divinely gifted *ṛṣi*, “seer,” who was endowed with an infallible and omniscient vision enabling him to witness directly all the events recounted in his poem. Thus, his version of the tale is widely regarded as the first and most authentic and unfalsifiable historical account of the life of its hero, Rāma, and all the other characters—human, simian, avian, divine, and demonic—with whom his career intersects.

A unique characteristic of Vālmiki’s *Rāmāyaṇa* is that it is almost universally revered in the Indian literary tradition as the veritable *fons et origo* of the entire genre of *kāvya*, “poetry,” or what we would call *belles lettres*: texts whose purpose, among others, is to stimulate our aesthetic sensibilities. Thus, the work is widely revered as the *Ādikāvya*, “The First Poem,” from which all later poetry derives, while its author is venerated as the *Ādikavi*, “The First Poet.” Indeed, the poem’s tale of the life of its hero, Rāma, has come down to us with a prologue in the form of a meta-narrative about exactly how Vālmiki came to learn the story of Rāma and how he was inspired to craft it into a massive musical and poetic history. In that prologue, we read that Lord Brahmā, the creator divinity himself, inspired the sage to compose the tale of Rāma in metrical verse, “to delight the heart.” In other words, in addition to its other merits, Vālmiki’s magnum opus is a grand entertainment filled with emotional scenes, romantic idylls, heroic warriors, beautiful princesses, monstrous villains, comical monkeys, and cataclysmic battles. And so, along with the innumerable subsequent retellings it has inspired throughout the countries and cultures of southern Asia, the work has both delighted and edified its audiences for millennia.

But the work is not merely a literary account of a legendary hero’s life and struggles. It also functions on two other critical levels, the devotional and the ethical. We learn at the very outset of the poem that, despite appearances, its protagonist is no ordinary human. Together with his three brothers, Bharata, Lakṣmaṇa, and Śatrughna, he is, in fact, an incarnation of one of the supreme divinities of Hinduism, Lord Viṣṇu, who takes on various earthly forms over the long, recurring cycles of cosmic time when the righteous and righteousness (*dharma*) itself are imperiled at the hands of some mighty, demonic being or beings who are too powerful for even the lesser gods to resist. Thus, the warrior prince and righteous monarch Rāma is regarded as one of the principal *avatāras*, “incarnations,” of the Supreme Being and therefore an object of veneration, worship, and devotion for hundreds of millions of Hindus worldwide from deep antiquity to the present day. In this way, Vālmiki’s epic poem is one of the earliest sacred texts of the Vaiṣṇava tradition of Hinduism and stands at the head of

all the many Hindu versions of the *Rāmāyaṇa*.<sup>1</sup> Although it has sometimes been superseded in the affection of many of Rāma's *bhaktas*, "devotees," by later, regional versions of the epic, Vālmiki's *Rāmāyaṇa* remains a central scripture for some schools of Vaiṣṇavism to this day, and most Hindus revere both the poem and the poet. Indeed, the day traditionally regarded as Vālmiki's birthday is a "restricted," or optional, holiday on the Hindu calendar.

The epic narrative is constructed as a kind of morality play, an illustrative guide to righteous behavior, in the face of the most dire challenges and ethical dilemmas. At the same time, it is a grand cautionary tale of the downfall of the unrighteous, no matter how mighty they may be. Thus, the work, along with its role as a historical and literary text, functions as both a guide to moral and religious conduct (*dharmaśāstra*) and a political treatise on the proper exercise of kingship and governance (*nītiśāstra*). It fulfills these roles through the creation of (in some cases literally) towering figures whose characters and actions represent positive and negative exemplars for its audiences to emulate or to shun. In this way, the epic hero Rāma serves as the model for the ideal son, the ideal husband, the ideal warrior, and the ideal king. Thus, not only is he a god come to earth, but he is the ideal man. Other central figures serve similarly in their specific roles. The heroine, Sītā, is the ideal wife, a *pativrata*, a woman perfectly devoted to her husband for better or for worse. Lakṣmaṇa is the ideal younger brother, utterly faithful to his elder, Rāma. The monkey-hero Hanumān emerges as the very paragon of selfless devotion to one's lord. Then there is the anomalous figure of Vibhīṣaṇa, the virtuous *rākṣasa* brother of the epic's villain, who abandons his family and his people to take refuge and ally himself with Rāma.

On the "dark side," as it were, there is the monstrous, ten-headed *rākṣasa* king, Rāvaṇa, a ruthless conquistador who terrorizes all creatures, even the gods themselves. Rāvaṇa is a defiler of all sacred rites and a prolific sexual predator who rapes and abducts women throughout the three worlds until he meets his downfall at Rāma's hands. There is also Rāvaṇa's sinister and terrifying son, the sorcerer-warrior Rāvaṇi Indrajit, who, through his powers of illusion and magical rites, can make himself both invisible and invincible. Rāvaṇa's colossal younger brother is the horrifying, if almost comically grotesque, Kumbhakarna, who must be aroused from his perpetual sleep to wreak havoc on Rāma's army of semidivine monkeys (*vānaras*).

In opposing these sets of figures, the righteous and the unrighteous, the epic narrative establishes itself as a major episode in the grand and never-ending struggle between the forces of *dharma*, "good or righteousness," and the forces of *adharma*, "evil or unrighteousness," for control of the universe—a struggle that, as noted earlier, occasionally necessitates the divine intervention of the Supreme Being to resolve it in favor of *dharma*. In the end, once Rāma has been victorious in his battle with Rāvaṇa and his evil minions, recovered his abducted wife, and established himself on his ancestral throne, he inaugurates a millennia-long

<sup>1</sup> It should be noted that the immense popularity and influence of the *Rāmāyaṇa* has extended to virtually all the religious cultures of Asia, many of which do not subscribe to the *avatāra* theory of the Vaiṣṇava Hindus. So, in the many Jain versions of the tale, Rāma is regarded as a virtuous Jain layman; for the Buddhists of South and Southeast Asia, he is a *bodhisattva*, a future Buddha; and for the peoples of the Malay-Indonesian world, he is portrayed as an ideal Islamic prince.

utopian kingdom, the so-called *Rāmarājya*, “Kingdom of Rāma,” which lives on in the political imagination of India to this day. This morality play, reenacted annually across much of India in the *Rāmīlā*, “The Play of Rāma,” a rather more cheerful popular celebration than the European Passion Play it parallels, continues to entertain and edify hundreds of millions who worship Rāma and Sītā (*Sītārām*). At the drama’s conclusion, vast crowds of devotees and onlookers celebrate as a giant effigy of the demonic Rāvaṇa, packed with fireworks, is set ablaze for a glorious celebration of the triumph of good over evil.

### *Vālmiki’s Epic: The Text*

The original Princeton University Press translation of the *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa* (PVR), which forms the basis of the present volume, is based, with a number of revisions and emendations, on the seven-volume critical edition of the poem produced by the scholars of the Rāmāyaṇa Department of the Oriental Institute of Baroda, India, between 1960 and 1975 under the general editorship of a series of distinguished experts in the field of Sanskrit epic studies.<sup>2</sup> But before we delve into the translation, it will perhaps be helpful for the reader to understand exactly what the critical edition is, how it relates to the many other published editions (and their corresponding translations) of the poem, and something of the textual history of this remarkable work.

The poem’s *upodghāta*, “prologue,” which presents an account of its creation and early performance, describes it as having been composed by the sage Vālmiki, who subsequently taught it to two of his disciples, the twin bards Lava and Kuśa, who turn out actually to be Rāma’s long-lost children. They have been living, unbeknownst to their father, in exile with their banished mother, Sītā, in the sage’s ashram. The brothers literally take their show on the road and sing the poem, with musical accompaniment, on the highways and byways of India until, as the tale goes, they present it as a command performance at their father’s court, where they are recognized as his long-lost sons.

Such is the legend. But it is not implausible that, at least in its earliest stages, the work was orally composed as a sort of bardic lay, transmitted aurally from master to disciple and performed aloud to popular audiences, the vast majority of whom would almost certainly have been illiterate and thus unable to imbibe the work in any other way even had it been available in written form. Nonetheless, as the celebrity of the poem spread in antiquity, it would surely at an early date have entered into the rich and emerging manuscript culture of the Indian subcontinent. And it is here that problems arise with regard to our efforts to

<sup>2</sup> Throughout the translation, despite our admiration for and gratitude to the editors and scholars who produced the Baroda critical edition for their monumental achievement, we, as translators, have occasionally found ourselves in disagreement with some of their specific choices. In these cases, we have emended the critical text in accordance with our own readings of the manuscript evidence. These emendations are particularly noticeable in the seventh book of the epic, the *Uttarakāṇḍa*. There, in keeping with our reading of what we believe to be compelling manuscript evidence, we have inserted two relatively lengthy passages that were relegated to the appendices of the volume by the editor of this volume. These passages are to be found at PVR 7: 348–359 and 421–424. All these emendations are marked as such in the present edition. Readers interested in our rationale for these emendations can consult the introductions and notes to the relevant passages in the various volumes of the PVR.

understand what the text of the poem was like in its earliest form or forms. For one thing, orally composed and performed tales, as we know from much more recent examples, may change to greater or lesser extents in different performances by the same bard and in performances by different singers, either through failures of memory or as a result of improvisation in response to different times, places, occasions, and audience reactions.<sup>3</sup>

Then, too, there are similar problems with manuscripts depending on the diligence and competence of the copyists. Such issues are particularly weighty in the case of the scribal transmission of Sanskrit texts in India because Sanskrit, although a highly conservative and grammatically regulated language for the most part, has never had a single principal script in which it was written, unlike, say, Greek or Latin. Thus, as the manuscript tradition of Vālmiki's *Rāmāyaṇa* developed over time, the work came to be copied in a wide variety of regional scripts from all parts of India, from the Śāradā script of Kashmir to the Grantha and Malayalam scripts of the deep south and the scripts of many others in between. These various regional scripts in turn contributed to a sort of graphic game of “telephone” in which scribes copying a manuscript from one script into another for their local audiences might well make significant errors or alterations.

As a result of these factors and the very popularity of the work itself, the poem has undergone numerous and complex textual changes that have resulted in the formation of a number of primary and secondary recensions, or textual variants. Basically, there are two large recensional versions—manuscripts from northern India in northern scripts and manuscripts from southern India in southern scripts—along with many manuscripts in the widely written and printed Devanāgarī script. The textual differences between these two large recensions are significant: in a word-for-word, verse-for-verse, passage-for-passage comparison between the northern and southern versions, only about one-third of the text is textually identical in the two versions.

Even this north-south division does not fully reflect the textual variation of the *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*. Within each major recension, there are further regional sub-recensions. Modern printed editions of the poem represent one or another of the recensions or sub-recensions. Thus, there is Gaspare Gorresio's edition of the Gauḍīya (Bengal) recension, Vishva Bandhu's “Lahore” edition of the north-western recension, and the numerous editions of the southern recensions such as the “Kumbakonam” edition and those of the Gujarati Printing Press, the Nirnaya Sagara Press, the Gita Press, and the Venkateshwara Steam Press. All existing translations of the *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*, with the exception of ours and the subsequent one of Bibek Debroy, are based on one or another of the existing published editions.<sup>4</sup> For this reason, readers familiar with other published editions or translations based on them will note that, in many places, ours is different from those they may have read and been led to believe are the “authentic” text of the epic.

Yet another factor here is the question of time and the perishability of manuscript media in South and Southeast Asia. Sanskrit manuscripts, depending on

<sup>3</sup> For the classic study of oral epic composition and transmission, see Lord 2000.

<sup>4</sup> Debroy 2017.

period and region, have been written on a variety of media, including prepared palm leaves, birch bark, and various forms of paper. These materials have generally had relatively short life spans in the hot and humid environment of monsoon Asia. Manuscripts succumb to mold, insects, general neglect, and even, in some cases, a form of pious destruction: religious texts like the *Rāmāyaṇa* have sometimes been consigned to bodies of water in the practice of *visarjana*, “release,” of sacred images, icons, or texts.

The plethora of recensional variants and the loss of perishable manuscripts over time thus presents the scholar of the *Rāmāyaṇa* with a serious problem when it comes to understanding what the poem may have been like in its early stages. The core of the work appears to have been originally a product of the middle of the first millennium BCE, but because of the factors just mentioned, its oldest known manuscripts are dated no earlier than the twelfth or thirteenth centuries CE, leaving a period of some seventeen centuries from which we can recover virtually no written record of the poem.

This is where the critical edition of the poem comes in. Basically, what the scholars at the Oriental Institute of Baroda did was to select exemplars from the various recensions and sub-recensions and compare them in an attempt to determine what might be the oldest recoverable readings. Using established, scientific philological principles—such as privileging text that is common to both the north and south; giving preference to the south, which gives evidence of being the older of the two recensions; and, when there is disagreement between the two recensions, rejecting passages that appear in only one recension—the Baroda scholars reconstructed an archetype of the existing manuscripts of Vālmiki’s epic.<sup>5</sup> The final product of such a process is, of course, a text found nowhere else, but one that is nevertheless a scientific attempt to approximate, we must stress, not the original *Rāmāyaṇa*—a goal that is beyond the power of scholarship—but the archetype of the existing manuscripts, taking us perhaps to a reconstructed stage in the text’s history somewhere in the medieval period. We should note that, because of the excision of verses and passages that did not meet the editorial criteria of the creators of the critical edition, this text is somewhat shorter than the other printed editions.

### *The Epic: Its Structure and Its Narrative*

As the poem has come down to us in all of its recensions and variants, it is a very lengthy narrative account of the life of its hero, Rāma, and of those with whom he interacted during his long and often challenging career. This narrative is presented throughout in metrical Sanskrit couplets. These are overwhelmingly of the type known as *śloka* or *anuṣṭubh*, verses of thirty-two syllables divided up into four equal *pādas*, “metrical quarters,” consisting of eight syllables each. This is an enormously popular meter in many genres of Sanskrit text—poetic, scientific, didactic, religious, and so on. As in the other great Sanskrit epic, the *Mahābhārata*, these verses are sometimes varied with an assortment of

<sup>5</sup> For those who may be interested in the principles adopted by the editors of the critical edition, see the first volume of Bhatt 1960: xxxiv. Further information can be found in the introductions to each volume of the series.

one or more longer poetic meters, often to mark more richly figurative passages or, as in many later poetic narratives, to mark the closure of a *sarga*, “chapter.”<sup>6</sup>

The poem is divided into seven discrete *kāṇḍas*, “books,” of varying length, which in turn are divided into a varying number of *sargas*. The chapters are numbered sequentially in each book starting from one, while each of the books has its own title, which sometimes differs in various recensions. The books are generally named for stages in the life of the epic hero, for the locales in which the principal actions are set, or for those actions themselves. The books are:

- The *Bālakāṇḍa*, “The Book of the Child”
- The *Ayodhyākāṇḍa*, “The Book of Ayodhyā”
- The *Aranyakāṇḍa*, “The Book of the Forest”
- The *Kiṣkindhākāṇḍa*, “The Book of Kiṣkindhā”
- The *Sundarakāṇḍa*, “The Beautiful Book”
- The *Yuddhakāṇḍa*, “The Book of the War”<sup>7</sup>
- The *Uttarakāṇḍa*, “The Last Book”

### The Bālakāṇḍa

The epic’s first book begins with an *upodghāta*, “prologue,” which provides a highly compressed account of the epic narrative and tells how its author came to compose the poem and, in the process, create the very genre of poetry. It also describes how the work was first transmitted and performed and provides a brief table of its contents. According to this framing narrative, the sage Vālmiki, while hosting a visit from the celebrated divine seer Nārada, asks his guest if there is any truly great, heroic, and righteous man living in their world. After a moment’s thought, the seer responds with a brief, seventy-two-verse laudatory description of Rāma, including the major events of his career and the utopian conditions that prevailed during his idyllic eleven-thousand-year reign. Although this concise and decidedly prosaic narrative makes no explicit reference to Rāma’s status as an incarnation of Lord Viṣṇu, it does conclude with a brief statement of the worldly, spiritual, and heavenly rewards that accrue to anyone who reads, recites, or hears the tale of the hero, an example of what is known in Sanskrit as a *phalaśruti*, “fruitful hearing,” that is regularly found at the end of Hindu religious texts.

Following Nārada’s departure, Vālmiki wanders into the woodlands to take his ritual bath. There, as he raptly watches a pair of mating *sārasa* cranes, a tribal hunter emerges from the forest and kills the male bird. In an access of compassion for the grieving female, the sage curses the hunter, the words pouring from his mouth in metrical form suitable for musical rendition and accompaniment. Upon his return to his ashram, he is visited by the creator god, Lord Brahmā, who tells him that he had granted the sage the gifts of poetic inspiration and clairvoyance and commissions him to compose a great and moving poem about the life of Rāma, greatly expanding upon the concise version of it he had heard

<sup>6</sup> In the *Mahābhārata*, these sections are called *adhyaayas*.

<sup>7</sup> Manuscripts of the northern recension generally entitle the sixth book the *Laṅkākāṇḍa*, “The Book of Laṅkā.”

from Nārada. Vālmiki teaches the poem to his disciples, the twin sons of Rāma and Sitā, and the boys, acting as bards, sing it on the highways and byways of the region until, at last, they perform it before their father, King Rāma, who recognizes them as his long-lost sons and heirs.

The epic story proper begins in the fifth *sarga* of the *kāṇḍa*. It tells us of the mighty and prosperous kingdom of Kosala, whose king, the wise and powerful Daśaratha, rules from the beautiful and impregnable city of Ayodhyā. The king possesses all that a man could desire except a son and heir. On the advice of his ministers, and with the somewhat obscure intervention of the legendary sage Ṛṣyaśṛṅga, the king performs a pair of sacrifices, as a consequence of which four splendid sons are born to him by his three principal wives. These sons, Rāma, Bharata, Lakṣmaṇa, and Śatrughna, we are given to understand, are infused with varying portions of the essence of the Supreme Lord Viṣṇu, who, in response to a plea from the gods, has agreed to be born as a man in order to destroy a violent and otherwise invincible demon, the powerful king of the *rākṣasas*, Rāvaṇa. To assist him in this vital mission, the vedic gods also incarnate themselves in the form of immensely powerful monkeys, gifted with human speech and able to take on any form at will. The mighty ten-headed *rākṣasa* has long been oppressing and assaulting the gods and holy sages with impunity, for, by virtue of a boon that he has received through his austerities from Lord Brahmā, he is invulnerable to all supernatural beings. This last point is critical to our understanding of Vālmiki's version of the Rāma story and it is why, unlike in many later, more floridly devotional versions of the tale, Viṣṇu must not only take on the appearance of a man to accomplish his mission but also remain essentially ignorant of his own true, divine nature, so as not to violate Brahmā's boon.

Daśaratha's sons pass a pleasant and uneventful childhood, which the poet glosses over in a few brief couplets. There we learn that the four brothers basically divide themselves into two pairs, the foremost being Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, with Bharata and Śatrughna forming a somewhat secondary pair. In each pair, the older brother is dominant while the younger functions largely as a sort of esquire, as it were, to his elder.

One day, however, when the princes are still mere adolescents, the powerful and irascible sage Viśvāmitra arrives at court and asks the king to lend him his eldest and favorite son, Rāma, for the task of destroying a pair of demons, the *rākṣasas* Mārīca and Subāhu, who have been harassing his ashram and disrupting his vedic sacrifices. With great reluctance, and only out of fear of the sage's curse, the doting king permits Rāma to go. Then, accompanied by the sage and his inseparable companion, his younger brother Lakṣmaṇa, the prince sets out for the sage's ashram. On their journey, Rāma is told—in response to his questions—a number of stories from Indian mythology that are associated with the sites through which the party passes. At one point, on the orders of the sage, Rāma somewhat hesitantly kills a terrifying *rākṣasa* woman (*rākṣasi*) named Tāṭakā and, as a reward for his valor, receives from the sage a set of supernatural weapon-spells. At last the princes reach the hermitage of Viśvāmitra, where, with his newly acquired weapons, Rāma puts an end to the sages' harassment by the *rākṣasas*, killing one and hurling the other, stunned, to a great distance.

But it turns out that Viśvāmitra has another plan in mind for his protégé. Rather than returning directly to Ayodhyā, he takes the brothers along with him

to the city of Mithilā, where Janaka, the king of the country of Videha, is said to be in possession of a massive and mighty bow that had once belonged to the great god Lord Śiva. No earthly prince has ever been able to wield or even lift this divine weapon, and the king has set this feat as the bride-price for the hand of his beautiful foster daughter, Sītā, the daughter of the earth goddess. After arriving at Mithilā, Rāma easily lifts the bow and breaks it with a thunderous crash. Marriages are then arranged between the sons of Daśaratha and the daughters and nieces of Janaka. Prior to the ceremonies, the text provides a fifteen-chapter, well-known mini-saga of the early career of Viśvāmitra, his rivalry with the sage Vasiṣṭha, and his accomplishment, through long and fierce austerities, of the all-but-impossible feat of transforming himself from a kshatriya king into a brahman-seer.

The weddings are celebrated at Mithilā with great festivity, and the wedding party returns to Ayodhyā. On the way, Rāma meets and faces down the fierce warrior-brahman, Rāma Jāmadagnya (Paraśurāma), the legendary nemesis of the warrior class who, like Rāma himself, is regarded as an *avatāra* of Lord Viṣṇu. At last the brothers and their brides settle in Ayodhyā, where they live in peace and contentment. The *kāṇḍa* thus serves as a sort of bildungsroman of the epic hero, outlining his education into traditional lore, his initiation into the secrets of supernatural weaponry, his boyhood feats, and his marriage.

### *The Ayodhyākāṇḍa*

The second book of the epic is set, as the name suggests, mostly in the city of Ayodhyā. Here we find that, in the absence of Prince Bharata, who is away on a visit to his maternal family, Daśaratha has decided to retire from the kingship and consecrate Rāma as prince regent in his stead. The announcement of Rāma's impending consecration is greeted with general rejoicing, and elaborate preparations for the ceremony are begun. On the eve of the auspicious event, however, Kaikeyī, the middlemost of the king's three wives and his favorite, is roused to a fit of jealousy and resentment by her maidservant, Mantharā, under whose guidance she claims two boons that the king had once granted her long ago but never fulfilled. In his infatuation for the beautiful Kaikeyī, and constrained by his rigid devotion to his given word, the king, although heartbroken, accedes to her demands and orders Rāma exiled to the wilderness for fourteen years while allowing the succession to pass from him to Kaikeyī's son, Bharata.

Despite the rebellious rage of his loyal brother Lakṣmaṇa, Rāma, exhibiting the stoicism, adherence to righteousness, and filial devotion for which he is widely revered, expresses no distress upon hearing of this stroke of malign fate and prepares immediately to carry out his father's orders. Sītā resists Rāma's initial instructions to remain behind in the capital and vows to follow him into hardship and exile. Rāma gives away all of his personal wealth and, donning the garb of a forest ascetic, departs for the wilderness, accompanied only by his faithful wife, Sītā, and his devoted brother, Lakṣmaṇa. The entire population of the city is consumed with grief for the exiled prince, and the king, his cherished hopes for Rāma's consecration shattered and his beloved son banished by his own hand, dies of a broken heart.

Messengers are dispatched to summon Bharata back from his lengthy stay at the court of his uncle in Rājagṛha. But the prince indignantly refuses to profit by the scheming of Mantharā and his mother. He rejects the throne and instead proceeds with a grand entourage to the forest in an effort to persuade Rāma to return and rule. But Rāma, determined to carry out the order of his father to the letter, refuses to return before the end of the fourteen-year period set for his exile. The brothers reach an impasse that is resolved only when Bharata agrees to govern as regent in Rāma's name. In token of Rāma's sovereignty, Bharata takes his brother's sandals to set on the throne in his stead. He vows to remain outside the capital until Rāma's return and to serve as regent from a village near the capital. Rāma, Sītā, and Lakṣmaṇa then abandon their pleasant mountain-top dwelling as being too close to the city and move south into the wild and *rākṣasa*-infested Daṇḍaka forest.

The *Ayodhyākāṇḍa* is noteworthy in a number of respects. For one thing, it raises ethical questions about the actions of the old king Daśaratha. For, although he is portrayed as the model of a righteous king, it appears that, as hinted at in the opening of the book and, in fact, confirmed near its end by Rāma himself, the king had once promised the royal succession to Kaikeyī's son as a prenuptial agreement. Moreover, it shows the king as subordinating his royal duty to his infatuation for the beautiful junior queen in his efforts to placate her even before she mentions the matter of his two unfulfilled boons. In this way, it constructs the old king as a kind of foil for Rāma and helps us understand the hard choices the latter will later make in service of his ideal of righteous kingship. In addition, the book gives us a certain insight into how the author understood the gendered politics of the royal women's quarters as Mantharā explains to the naive and malleable Kaikeyī how her status as the king's favorite will come to haunt her should her rival Kausalyā become queen mother upon the consecration of Rāma.

### *The Araṇyakāṇḍa*

The epic's third book recounts the dramatic events that occur during the long years of Rāma's exile in the forest (*araṇya*). The prince and his two companions have now pushed on into the Daṇḍaka forest, a wilderness peopled only by pious ascetics and fierce *rākṣasas*. The former appeal to Rāma to protect them from the depredations of the latter, and he promises to do so. Near the beginning of the book, Sītā is briefly carried off by a *rākṣasa* called Virādha in an episode that prefigures her later abduction by Rāvaṇa, the central event of the book and the pivotal episode of the epic.

While the three are dwelling peacefully in the lovely woodlands of Pañcavaṭī, they are visited by a *rākṣasa* woman, Śūrpaṇakhā, the sister of the *rākṣasa* lord, Rāvaṇa. She attempts to seduce first Rāma and then Lakṣmaṇa, but failing in this, she tries to kill Sītā. The *rākṣasa* woman is stopped by Lakṣmaṇa, who, acting on his elder's orders, mutilates her. She runs shrieking to one of her kinsmen, the powerful *rākṣasa* Khara, who sends a small punitive expedition of fourteen fierce *rākṣasas* against the princes. When Rāma annihilates them, Khara himself comes at the head of a large army of fourteen thousand terrible *rākṣasas*, but the hero once more exterminates his attackers. When these tidings come

to the ears of Rāvaṇa, he resolves to destroy Rāma by carrying off Sītā. Enlisting the aid of the *rākṣasa* Mārīca, the *rākṣasa* whom Rāma had stunned during the *Bālakāṇḍa* battle at Viśvāmitra's ashram, the demon king comes to the Pañcavaṭī forest. There Mārīca, using the *rākṣasas*' power of shape-shifting, assumes the form of a beautiful golden deer, in order to captivate Sītā's fancy and lure Rāma far off into the woods in an effort to catch it for her. Finally, struck by Rāma's arrow, the dying *rākṣasa* imitates Rāma's voice and cries out as if in peril. At Sītā's panicky urging, Lakṣmaṇa, disobeying Rāma's strict orders to guard her, leaves her alone and follows him into the woods.

In the brothers' absence, Rāvaṇa, assuming the guise of a pious brahman mendicant, approaches Sītā and, after some increasingly inappropriate sexual comments, carries her off by force. Daśaratha's old friend, the vulture Jaṭāyus, attempts to save her, but after a fierce aerial battle, he falls, mortally wounded. Sītā is carried off to Rāvaṇa's island fortress of Laṅkā where she is kept under a heavy guard of fierce and bloodthirsty *rākṣasa* women.

Meanwhile, upon discovering the loss of Sītā, Rāma laments wildly and, maddened by grief, wanders through the forest, vainly searching for her and threatening the plants and animals if they do not return her to him. At length, pacified by Lakṣmaṇa, and, after meeting several beings who have been cursed to become *rākṣasas*, he is directed to the monkey prince Sugrīva at Lake Pampā. This brings the *Araṇyakāṇḍa* to a close.

In addition to its narrative centrality, the *Araṇyakāṇḍa*, like the *Kiṣkindhākāṇḍa* that follows it, has a number of passages of great poetic beauty in which the seasonal changes in the forest are described. Further, as has been noted by several scholars, it differs sharply from the preceding book in leaving the relatively realistic world of political intrigue in Ayodhyā for an enchanted forest of talking birds, flying monkeys, and fearsome *rākṣasas* with magical powers.

### *The Kiṣkindhākāṇḍa*

The fourth book of the epic is set largely in and around the monkey (*vānara*) citadel of Kiṣkindhā and continues the somewhat fairy-tale-like atmosphere of the preceding book. Searching in the forest for Sītā, Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa meet the son of the wind god, Hanumān, the greatest of monkey heroes and an adherent of Sugrīva, the banished pretender to the throne of Kiṣkindhā. Upon meeting Rāma, Sugrīva tells him a curious tale of his rivalry and conflict with his elder brother, the monkey king Vālin, and his own banishment by the latter. He and Rāma conclude a pact according to which the latter is to help the former kill the more powerful Vālin and take both his throne and his queen. In return for this, Sugrīva agrees to aid Rāma in his search for the abducted princess.

Accordingly, Rāma shoots Vālin from ambush while the latter is engaged in hand-to-hand combat with Sugrīva. Finally, after much delay, procrastination, and threats from Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, Sugrīva musters his monkey warriors and sends them out in the four directions to scour the earth in search of Sītā. The southern expedition, under the leadership of Vālin's son, Aṅgada, and Hanumān, has several strange adventures, including a sojourn in an enchanted underground realm. Finally, having failed in their quest, the southern party is ashamed

and fearful of returning to Sugrīva empty-handed. They resolve to fast to death but are rescued from this fate by the appearance of the aged vulture Sampāti, elder brother of the slain vulture Jaṭāyus, who tells them of Sītā's confinement across the sea in Laṅkā. The monkeys discuss what is to be done, and in the end, Hanumān, the only monkey powerful enough to leap across the ocean, volunteers to do so in search of the princess.

The book has given rise to a continuing controversy within the receptive community of the *Rāmāyaṇa*, in that the tradition has expressed ambivalent feelings about the way Rāma killed Vālin from ambush while the monkey was engaged in a hand-to-hand battle with his brother Sugrīva. The issue is first argued out between the hero and the dying monkey in the text itself and continues to this day to be discussed in ephemeral texts on the epic in one or another of its variants and in questions during religious discourses on the story. It also serves to move the ethical and moral register of the narrative from the generally strictly dharmic, or righteous, kingdom of Kosala to the rather more louche world of the monkey kingdom of Kiṣkindhā, with its fratricidal violence and sensual excess.

### *The Sundarakāṇḍa*

The fifth book of the poem is called, for reasons that are not wholly clear, the *Sundarakāṇḍa*, “The Beautiful Book,”<sup>8</sup> and it is centrally concerned with a detailed, vivid, violent, and often amusing account of Hanumān's adventures in the splendid fortress city of the island Laṅkā.

After a heroic and eventful leap across the ocean, Hanumān arrives on the shores of Laṅkā. There he explores the *rākṣasas'* city and spies on Rāvaṇa. The poet's descriptions of the city and the *rākṣasa* king are colorful and often finely written, as is his description of the forlorn Sītā in captivity. Held captive in a grove of *aśoka* trees, Sītā is alternately cajoled and threatened by Rāvaṇa and the *rākṣasa* women who guard her. When Hanumān at last finds the despondent princess, he comforts her, giving her Rāma's signet ring, which Rāma had bestowed upon him to serve as a token of his bona fides. He offers to carry Sītā back to Rāma, but she refuses, reluctant to allow herself to be willingly touched by a male other than her husband, and argues that Rāma must come himself to avenge the insult of her abduction.

Hanumān then wreaks havoc in Laṅkā, destroying groves and buildings and killing many servants and soldiers of the king. At last, he allows himself to be captured by Indrajit, Rāvaṇa's fearsome son, and is brought before Rāvaṇa. After an interview during which he reviles the king, he is condemned and his tail is set afire. But the monkey escapes his bonds and, leaping from rooftop to rooftop, sets fire to the city with his tail, ensuring that the conflagration spares both him and Sītā. Finally, the mighty monkey leaps back to the mainland and rejoins his companions. Together they make their way back to Kiṣkindhā, drunkenly raiding on the way a grove belonging to Sugrīva. Hanumān reports his adventures and the success of his mission to Rāma and Sugrīva.

<sup>8</sup> For a discussion of the name of this book, see PVR 5: 75–78.

The *Sundarakāṇḍa* is considered by many to be the *bija*, “seed”—or, as we might say, the heart—of the epic poem. This is probably because it is in this book that the tragic trajectory of the narrative begins to reverse itself with Hanumān’s discovery of the abducted heroine and her renewed hope of rescue and reunion with her husband. Thus, ritualized formal recitations (*parāyaṇa*) of the complete text of the *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa* are traditionally begun with this book and not the first one, the *Bālakāṇḍa*. In some Hindu communities for which the work is a central scripture, the book is used as a prognosticative text, somewhat in the manner of the *I Ching*, and its recitation is believed to help in the solution of many worldly problems. For this reason, the book is often printed and sold separately from the epic as a whole, like the *Bhagavadgītā* of the *Mahābhārata*.

### The Yuddhakāṇḍa

As its name suggests, the sixth book of the poem, the *Yuddhakāṇḍa*, “The Book of War,” is chiefly concerned with the war that takes place before the walls of Laṅkā between the forces of Rāma, his monkey allies, and a few defector *rākṣasas* on one side, and the *rākṣasa* hordes of Rāvaṇa on the other. The book contains elaborate descriptions of the monkey (*vānara*) forces and many detailed accounts of both single combats and mass melees between the various leading warriors and their troops. As a result, it is the longest of the poem’s seven *kāṇḍas* and nearly twice the size of the next-longest.

Having received Hanumān’s report on Sītā and the military defenses of Laṅkā, Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa march with their simian allies to the southern coast of India. There they are joined by Rāvaṇa’s renegade brother Vibhīṣaṇa, who, repelled by his brother’s outrageous abduction of Sītā and unable to reason with him, has defected, with a handful of retainers, to the side of his enemies. He is accepted as an ally by Rāma and provides him with vital intelligence and assistance throughout the war.

Under the direction of their engineer Nala, the son of the divine architect, Viśvakarman, the monkeys construct a bridge across the ocean by means of which the princes and their army cross over to Laṅkā and lay siege to the city. A protracted and bloody, though far from realistic, series of battles rage, with the advantage shifting from one side to the other. After an initial encounter with Rāma, Rāvaṇa is humiliatingly dismissed by his foe and withdraws from the battlefield for a time. He then dispatches, one after another, his foremost warriors, each of whom is killed in turn by Rāma or his allies. Noteworthy among these are his gargantuan and narcoleptic brother Kumbhakarna and his terrifying son Rāvaṇi Indrajit, who is both a mighty warrior and a fearsome sorcerer. Finally, all his champions slain, Rāvaṇa rides forth to battle and, after a mighty and prolonged duel, Rāma finally kills him. Rāma then installs Vibhīṣaṇa on the throne of Laṅkā and sends for Sītā. But Rāma initially expresses no joy in recovering her. Instead, he abuses her verbally and refuses to take her back on the grounds that she has lived in the house of another man. Only when the princess is proved innocent of any unfaithfulness by submitting herself to a public ordeal by fire does the prince accept her.

At last, his enemy slain, his wife recovered, and his fourteen years of exile passed, Rāma returns home in Vibhīṣaṇa’s flying palace, the Puṣpaka. Upon his

return to Ayodhyā, Rāma relieves Bharata, who had been administering the kingdom as an ascetic during his absence, and celebrates his long-delayed royal consecration, inaugurating a millennia-long utopian reign, the famous *Rāma-rājya*. In many later influential versions of the *Rāmāyaṇa*, the tale ends here, leaving it with a “happily ever after” ending. But this is far from the case in Vālmiki’s poem.

### The Uttarakāṇḍa

The seventh and final book of Vālmiki’s *Rāmāyaṇa*, entitled simply the *Uttarakāṇḍa*, “The Last Book,”<sup>9</sup> is more heterogeneous in its contents and controversial in its reception than any of the epic’s other six books. Of the nature of an extensive epilogue, it contains three general categories of narrative material. The first category includes legends that provide the background, origins, and early careers of some of the outstanding and endlessly fascinating characters in the epic drama whose antecedents were not fully described in the first six books. Interestingly, nearly the entire first half of the book is devoted to a lengthy account of the history and genealogy of the *rākṣasas* and the early career of Rāvaṇa and, to a much smaller extent, to an account of the childhood deeds of Hanumān. In this section many of the events of the central portion of the epic story are explained as having had their roots in encounters and curses in the distant past during Rāvaṇa’s wild career of rape, conquest, and carnage.

The bulk of this portion of the text concerns Rāvaṇa’s birth and early years and his many campaigns of world conquest, during which he defeats and assaults many kings, gods, sages, and demons and rapes and abducts their womenfolk. Some of the curses he incurs during his wild and violent rampage through the three worlds serve to explain a number of conditions that face him later on, during the lifetime of Rāma. First, he is cursed prenatally by his own father to be an evildoer. Subsequently Vedavati, a brahman woman whom he molests, immolates herself, vowing to be reborn one day (as Sītā) for his destruction. After he rapes a semidivine woman, her lover curses him to die should he ever again take a woman by force. Similarly, he is cursed by the collectivity of the many women he has abducted to meet his death on account of a woman, and he is cursed by a king of the lineage of the Ikṣvākus—whom he kills—to be himself slain by a future prince (Rāma) of that lineage. Even the destruction of Rāvaṇa’s hosts by powerful, semidivine monkeys is explained by a curse on the part of Lord Śiva’s attendant Nandin, who, enraged at Rāvaṇa for mocking him in his simian form, curses him to that effect.

But despite his boon from Brahmā and his long string of conquests, the narrative shows that no one is ultimately invulnerable. The biography of the seemingly invincible *rākṣasa* ends with two accounts of battles in which he emerges as the loser: he is defeated and captured first by the mighty thousand-armed human king Arjuna Kārtavīrya and then also defeated by the powerful monkey king Vālin. These episodes, narrated by the sage Agastya, serve to show that even the mightiest can meet their match and to foreshadow Rāvaṇa’s

<sup>9</sup> For a discussion of the name of this book, see PVR 7: 88\*20 and note (p. 1179).

ultimate defeat at the hands of a “mere man,” Rāma. This is all in keeping with Vālmiki’s adherence to the boon of Brahmā according to which the *rākṣasa* king would be invulnerable to all supernatural beings, but not to humans or animals.

The second category of the *Uttarakāṇḍa*’s narrative material consists of a series of exemplary myths and legends that are only thematically related to the epic story and its characters. This material is largely made up of cautionary tales told to or by Rāma to illustrate the dire consequences that befall monarchs who fail to strictly uphold the duties of kingship. They are placed in the text at the points, as we discuss later, where Rāma has become prey to dejection after feeling obligated by kingly duty to exile his beloved wife, where he is contemplating a sacrifice, and when he visits the ashram of the sage Agastya. These episodes also generally serve to bolster the poem’s reputation as a textbook on *rājadharmā*, “royal duty,”—a kind of mirror for kings that presents its hero as the model of the ideal monarch.

The last, and in several ways the most interesting, category of material in the *Uttarakāṇḍa* directly concerns itself with episodes from the final years of Rāma, his wife, and his brothers. These episodes are interspersed among the largely cautionary tales of the second category mentioned earlier. With struggle, adversity, and sorrow seemingly behind him, Rāma settles down with Sītā to rule in peace, prosperity, and happiness. We see what looks to be the perfect end to a fairy tale or romance as Rāma and his queen begin their long-delayed rule of their utopian kingdom—the legendary, eleven-thousand-year *Rāmarājya*. But as it develops, there is yet trouble in paradise, and the joy of the hero and heroine is to be tragically brief.

After dismissing his allies in the Lañkan war with due honors and gifts, Rāma, to his delight, learns that his beloved Sītā is pregnant. But now it suddenly comes to his attention that, despite her fire ordeal in Lañkā, the people of Ayodhyā are grumbling that the king is corrupt in that, in his lust for the beautiful queen, he has taken back into his house a woman who has lived in the household of the lecherous Rāvaṇa. They fear that, since a king sets the moral standard for his kingdom, they too will have to put up with misbehavior on the part of their own wives.

Fearing a scandal, and in strict conformity to what he sees as the stern duty of a sovereign, Rāma, under the pretext of an excursion, banishes the queen despite her pregnancy and though he knows the spreading rumors about her are false. Abandoned in the wilderness by Lakṣmaṇa, the hapless queen is taken in and sheltered in his ashram by none other than the poet-seer Vālmiki. There she gives birth to twin sons, Lava and Kuśa, who will become the sage’s disciples and the bards who will perform their master’s poetic creation, the *Rāmāyaṇa*. Rāma’s separation from his beloved wife casts him into deep grief and depression, which are alleviated only through the hearing and telling of cautionary tales about the terrible fate of kings who neglect their royal duties.

During Rāma’s otherwise ideal reign, two anomalous but significant events occur. First, in a kind of mini-reprise of the central theme of the epic, Rāma receives a delegation of sages from the region of the Yamunā River, who have come to complain about the depredations of a terrible and monstrous demon called

Lavaṇa. Rāma deposes his youngest brother, Śatrughna, who has heretofore had almost no active role in the epic, to deal with this assault on *dharma*, “righteousness.” Śatrughna sets forth and, on his journey, stays over one night in the ashram of Vālmiki—the very night when Sitā gives birth to Lava and Kuśa. He then proceeds to the Yamunā, where, after a fierce battle, he dispatches the monster and founds the prosperous city of Madhurā (Mathurā) in the region of Saurāṣṭra, where he rules as a virtuous king. After twelve years, longing to see his beloved elder brother, he returns to Ayodhyā with his army, once more staying overnight at Vālmiki’s ashram. During this brief visit, he and his troops hear the *Rāmāyaṇa* beautifully sung by the twin bards. Although Śatrughna is eager to remain at his brother’s side, in keeping with the tenor of the book as a guide for kings, Rāma sternly orders him to return to his kingdom to govern his people righteously.

Shortly after Śatrughna’s departure, there is another troubling incident, this time in the capital city itself. A grieving brahman father arrives at Rāma’s palace holding in his arms the body of his young son. This is particularly troubling as, according to the tradition—stated multiple times in the epic, and continuing to be a fundamental element of the legacy of the *Rāmāyaṇa*—the long period of Rāma’s millennial reign was a true utopia. Thus, all classes of people strictly observed their proper societal duties, wives always obeyed their husbands, and there was no crime, no disease, and no natural disasters. One point that is stressed repeatedly is that in this paradisiac kingdom, no child ever predeceased its parents. In such a world, the fact that an unthinkable thing—the death of the brahman child—has occurred can only mean that some violation of the social and ritual order is taking place and that it is the responsibility of the king to remedy it. Rāma must therefore find and punish the transgressor. In this he is advised by Nārada, the same seer who first told Vālmiki the story of Rāma. Nārada tells the king that somewhere in his realm a *śūdra*—that is, a member of the lowest of the four traditional social classes of brahmanical society—is practicing religious austerities that are exclusively reserved (during that cosmic era, the Tretā Yuga) for the members of the three higher social classes, the so-called “twice-born.”

Rāma summons and mounts the Puṣpaka, the flying palace he had received from Vibhiṣaṇa, and conducts an aerial surveillance of his kingdom. Near the southern border he finds a man hanging from a tree by his feet. Questioned, the man says that he is practicing austerities with the aim of entering heaven in his earthly body. When he identifies himself as Śambūka, a *śūdra*, Rāma summarily beheads him. The moment the *śūdra* dies, the dead brahman child miraculously returns to life in Ayodhyā. The gods praise Rāma and shower him with heavenly blossoms.

Rāma then pays a brief visit to the ashram of the great sage Agastya, who had narrated the history of the *rākṣasas*, Rāvaṇa, and Hanumān earlier in the book. There Rāma hears a series of additional cautionary tales about kings and kingdoms that suffered ghastly punishments for failure to live up to the code of royal conduct. Rāma then returns to Ayodhyā. Having had a golden image of his banished wife created to serve as her surrogate in the performance of the royal sacrifices, Rāma performs a great *aśvamedha*, “horse sacrifice.”

During the rite, two handsome young bards appear and begin to recite the *Rāmāyaṇa*. It turns out that these two, the twins Kuśa and Lava, are in fact the sons of Rāma and Sītā, who have been sheltered for twelve years with their mother in Vālmiki's ashram. Rāma sends for his beloved queen, intending to take her back. But despite Vālmiki's attestation of her absolute fidelity, Rāma demands that Sītā take a solemn public oath before the assembled populace. She complies, but declares that if she has indeed been faithful to her husband in word, thought, and deed, Mādhavī, the earth goddess, her mother, should receive her. As the ground opens, the goddess emerges on a bejeweled throne, places her long-suffering daughter beside her, and vanishes into the earth.

Consumed by an inconsolable grief, Rāma performs sacrifices and rules for many years and sends his brothers out to conquer kingdoms for their sons. At last, urged by a messenger of the gods to resume his true heavenly form as Lord Viṣṇu, he is forced to banish Lakṣmaṇa, who abandons his earthly body in the Sarayū River. Rāma then divides his own kingdom between his sons and, followed by the inhabitants of Ayodhyā and most of his erstwhile allies, enters the waters of the Sarayū and returns to his heavenly abode. These events bring to a close both the book and the epic.

There are some features of the *Uttarakāṇḍa* that set it apart from the other books of the poem. For one thing, much of the narrative focuses on figures other than Rāma and is narrated only indirectly by Vālmiki, being placed in the mouths of other figures such as Agastya. Scholars of the *Rāmāyaṇa* have also noted that much of the text shows linguistic and rhetorical differences from the rest of the poem, especially books 2 through 6, while some have even argued that the entire book is a later addition to the work and that the "original" poem ended with the *Yuddhakāṇḍa* and the consecration of Rāma. This is a complex issue, and we will not go into the details of the arguments here.<sup>10</sup>

The philological issue aside, there is another reason that the book has been the object of controversy: virtually the only two actions that Rāma is represented as taking in the book have come to be matters of concern and contestation over the long history of the poem among particular segments of its audience, characterized by region, social class, religion, and gender. The first of these is the banishment of Sītā despite her innocence with regard to any infidelity or wrongdoing; Sītā's banishment and her fire ordeal at the end of the *Yuddhakāṇḍa* have been sources of discomfort for many later authors writing on the *Rāmāyaṇa* theme, and an object of outrage on the part of modern feminists and women's rights groups. The second issue is Rāma's cold-blooded execution of the *sūdra* ascetic Śambūka, which has drawn veiled critique from poets and playwrights in the *Rāmāyaṇa* tradition and, of course, the anger of modern Dalit rights activists and progressive political groups. These responses are in harmony with social and political pushback against the *Rāmāyaṇa* as a whole by such regional political movements as the Dravidian movement in South India, especially in Tamil Nadu.

As a result of all this, many influential regional language versions of the Rāma story simply eliminate the *Uttarakāṇḍa* entirely, while even some modern

<sup>10</sup> Those interested in this issue should consult PVR 7: 54–81.

translators similarly excise the book, either on philological grounds, in light of the textual issues noted here, or, in the case of some Hindu devotees of Rāma, in their discomfort with the two episodes mentioned here and the criticism they have engendered.<sup>11</sup>

### *The Major Characters of the Rāmāyaṇa*

Unlike the vast *Mahābhārata* with its large cast of ambivalent and intimately related characters, its theme of an ugly intrafamilial civil war, and its complex framing of moral and ethical ambiguities, the *Rāmāyaṇa* is a shorter, simpler tale constructed around a sharply defined binary of *dharma*, “good,” and *adharma*, “evil.” Correspondingly, its major characters tend to be drawn as paradigmatic examples of one or the other of this pair of opposites and are often clearly intended to serve as models for behavior that its audiences are urged either to emulate or eschew. Ignoring for the moment issues of social class, which we discuss later, the qualities of ethical and moral behavior and the culture’s prized virtues of familial solidarity, discipline, and control of the senses are broadly shown—with some notable exceptions—as possessed differentially by the three species of figures who collectively make up the bulk of the epic’s *dramatis personae*. These are the humans, the animals, and the demons. In this way, one might regard the story of the *Rāmāyaṇa* as something like “A Tale of Three Cities: Ayodhyā, Kiṣkindhā, and Laṅkā.” Let us briefly examine the principal figures belonging to these species—both those who serve as exemplary of their kind and those who go against their supposedly innate natures.

#### *The Humans*

##### **Rāma**

As the title of the poem suggests, Rāma is unquestionably the central and most compelling of the epic’s characters. With the exception of his early childhood, the narrative closely documents his life from birth to death. He is “on stage,” as it were, playing a significant role in the action of all of the epic’s books, with the exception of the *Sundarakāṇḍa*. But even there, much of the book’s discourse centers on him. The entire work is filled with passages praising his physical, mental, and emotional qualities; his virtually perfect adherence to the norms of filial piety, the warrior code (*kṣatriyadharmā*), and the duties of a king (*rājadharmā*); and his compassion and deference to brahmins and elders. In short, with the exception of what are regarded in some quarters as a few ethically controversial episodes involving his treatment of his wife, his killing of the monkey king Vālin, and his execution of Śambūka, Rāma is held up as a paragon of virtue, both for Vālmiki and for his audiences down to the present day. He is, of course, one of the principal incarnations of Lord Viṣṇu, the Supreme Being, who in age after age comes to earth to rid the world of some enormous evil. But on the human plane—the one on which we, as fellow humans, are supposed to emulate him—he is chiefly admired for his disciplined act of self-sacrifice in cheer-

<sup>11</sup> For a full discussion of these issues, see our extensive introduction to the book at PVR 7: 74–113.

fully abandoning his right to his ancestral throne in order to preserve the truth of his father's word. His forbearance and adherence to the rules of chivalry are also evident in his strict adherence to the rules of combat even in the face of defeat and death, as well as in his willingness to spare even his monstrous arch-enemy, should the latter abandon his evil ways.

Rāma is rather unusual, however, when compared with the other principal incarnations of Lord Viṣṇu, most of whom appear on earth for one brief moment to accomplish a single critical mission, such as the rescue of the gods, the salvation of the earth, or the salvation of the virtuous through the destruction of an evil tyrant. Once they have completed their respective missions, they return to their primordial divine form. Among the well-known standard list of the ten incarnations (*daśāvataras*), only Kṛṣṇa, the Buddha, and the two Rāmas (Rāma of the *Rāmāyaṇa* and Rāma Jāmadagnya, or Paraśurāma) remain for very long periods on earth. Of the two most popular and widely worshiped incarnations, Rāma and Kṛṣṇa, the latter, having accomplished his two avatāric missions of killing the demonic tyrant Kaṃsa and relieving the earth of its burden of demons and demonic kings—as described in the *Mahābhārata*, the *Harivaṃśa*, and many *purāṇas*—returns to his heavenly form only a few decades thereafter.<sup>12</sup> Rāma, on the other hand, having extracted, as it were, the *lokakaṇṭaka*, “the thorn of the world,” Rāvaṇa, then inaugurates and rules a millennia-long kingdom of God on earth.

## Sītā

There can be no doubt that Sītā, the heroine of the *Rāmāyaṇa*, is its most poignant and long-suffering figure. As a consequence of her long years of generally uncomplaining hardship, captivity, suffering, and heartbreak, her journey has captivated audiences from the moment of the epic's earliest circulation. Indeed, in terms of her centrality to the narrative, even when she is not the direct focus of the poet's attention, her wrenching reversals of fortune and her great fortitude under terrible duress make her one of the literature's most compelling figures. These are doubtless the reasons, as noted earlier, that the author proposed *The Great Tale of Sītā* (*sītāyāś caritaṃ mahat*) as a possible alternative title of his work.

Rescued from a ploughed furrow (*sītā*) as a foundling by King Janaka of Vi-deha, Sītā grows to be the most beautiful princess in the land, one so extraordinary that only the mightiest and most valorous of princes can win her hand through a test of superhuman strength. Of note is that Sītā's prehistory is mentioned only in the *Uttarakāṇḍa*. There we are told that she is the reincarnation of the pious brahman woman Vedavatī, who, in the long ago Kṛta Yuga, was sexually molested by Rāvaṇa and who, to preserve her honor, immolated herself, vowing to be reborn as the daughter of a virtuous man but not from a human

<sup>12</sup> According to the *Mahābhārata*, Kṛṣṇa abandoned his earthly form just thirty-six years after the end of the Bhārata War, the management of which constituted the second of his major avatāric missions. His incarnation ends immediately after the internecine slaughter of the Vṛṣṇis and Andhakas in Dvārakā. See the *Mausalaparvan* of the *Mahābhārata*. The chronology is given in the first *adhyāya* of the *Mausalaparvan* (*MBh* 16.1.1). Unless otherwise noted, all references are to the *Mahābhārata: Critical Edition* (1933–1970).

womb. Vedavati is ultimately reborn in the Tretā Yuga as Sitā for the destruction of Rāvaṇa, who had violated her.

Vālmiki's Sitā is not quite as passive and submissive as she is often thought to be in the popular imagination. She can be strongly outspoken, as, for example, when she sharply criticizes Rāma, who, upon being banished by his father, tries to persuade her to stay behind in Ayodhyā, and also when she is treated harshly either by him or by Rāvaṇa. Nonetheless, as a result of her long and patient endurance of the many hardships she faces—and especially her widely applauded and rather fierce insistence on accompanying her exiled husband into fourteen years of poverty and harsh conditions in the forest despite Rāma's initial resistance to her doing so—Sitā has come to be regarded as the model of ideal Indian wifely conduct, a *pativrata*, a woman completely devoted to following her husband no matter what fate may allot him.

### Lakṣmaṇa

One of the twin sons of King Daśaratha's junior-most wife, Sumitrā, Lakṣmaṇa has long stood as a prime exemplar of a particular type of idealized behavior that is expected of a younger brother with regard to his elder. From childhood onward, he serves as Rāma's inseparable companion. In fact, it appears that his relation to his elder as a kind of esquire is mirrored in the relationship of his much less foregrounded twin, Śatrughna, to the second eldest of the four brothers and co-*avatāras*, Bharata. Vālmiki describes Lakṣmaṇa as "a second life breath" outside Rāma's body and observes that without him by his side Rāma could neither sleep nor eat.<sup>13</sup>

Thus, it is virtually axiomatic that Lakṣmaṇa will accompany and assist Rāma in his long exile and in the hard-fought battles with the *rākṣasas* where he distinguishes himself as a formidable warrior, slaying the most dangerous and fearsome of their demonic foes, Rāvaṇi Indrajit, Rāvaṇa's son. It is particularly noteworthy that his devoted service to Rāma and Sitā is highlighted by the southern textual tradition's emphasis on his dogged refusal to gaze on the body of his sister-in-law, as demonstrated several times by his asseveration that during all their long years of living closely together he has never raised his eyes above Sitā's feet.<sup>14</sup>

Rāma's powerful emotional bond with Lakṣmaṇa is made apparent in the epic by the depictions of his extravagant grief when he believes that his brother has been mortally wounded in battle. In the end, Lakṣmaṇa sacrifices his life for the well-being of his beloved brother and the salvation of his family, becoming the only one of Rāma's brothers to precede him in returning to their common divine source, Lord Viṣṇu.

Lakṣmaṇa also serves as a kind of emotional foil for his brother, showing a fiery and rebellious spirit where Rāma is calm and self-controlled, and acting as a calming and encouraging influence on those few occasions when his brother gives way to rage or despair.

<sup>13</sup> VR 1.17.17.

<sup>14</sup> PVR 4: 213, notes to 4.6.19; R. Goldman 1980: 168; and PVR 7: 885, insert passage following notes to 7.17.14.

## Bharata

The son of Daśaratha's favorite, his middle wife, Kaikeyī, Bharata presents another aspect of the idealized younger brother. The natural rival of his brother and the intended beneficiary of the scheme of Kaikeyī and her maid Mantharā to make him prince regent in place of Rāma, Bharata refuses to accept his consecration. Instead, he implores Rāma to return and rule despite the reluctant command of their father. When Rāma denies his request, Bharata vows to serve only as regent in his brother's name. He places Rāma's sandals on the throne as a symbol of his brother's authority and lives an extremely ascetic life outside the capital during the fourteen years of Rāma's exile. In so doing, he serves as a model of both Rāma's self-sacrifice and Lakṣmaṇa's fraternal devotion.

## Śatrughna

The youngest of the four sons of Daśaratha who incarnate, to differing degrees, the divine essence of Lord Viṣṇu, Śatrughna has only a relatively minimal role in the epic drama. In his devotion to his older brother Bharata and in the way he serves as that brother's emotional foil, he mirrors the relationship of his twin, Lakṣmaṇa, to Rāma. This is evident when, returning to Ayodhyā with his brother to find his father dead and Rāma exiled as a result of the plot of Mantharā and Kaikeyī, Śatrughna physically assaults the maidservant until Bharata orders him to desist, reminding him of Rāma's disapproval of such conduct. Śatrughna's only significant, independent action in the poem is his slaying of the demon Lavaṇa and the founding of the city of Madhurā, as described in the poem's final book, the *Uttarakāṇḍa*.

## Daśaratha

Although Daśaratha is depicted in the opening chapters of the poem as a grand and righteous monarch, in its second book the aged king is shown to have a fatal flaw. There we see that his sexual infatuation for his beautiful junior queen, Kaikeyī, makes him vulnerable to her wiles, so that even before she mentions the famous boons he once gave her, he vows to do anything she wants, no matter how outrageous, in order to pacify her. Later in the same book, we learn from the lips of Rāma himself that the king had actually promised the royal succession to a son of Kaikeyī as part of a prenuptial agreement with her father. This is a promise that he breaks in order to consecrate Rāma while Bharata is away from the capital.

In this way, Daśaratha serves as a foil for his ultra-righteous eldest son Rāma, and the old king's flaws may be seen as explaining the latter's almost obsessive concern with maintaining his reputation for incorruptibility, which leads to his harsh treatment of Sītā in the *Yuddha-* and *Uttarakāṇḍas*.

## Kausalyā

Kausalyā, Daśaratha's chief queen and Rāma's mother, is portrayed as an ideal maternal figure: ascetic, pious, and utterly devoted to her son and her husband. But as the narrative makes clear, she no longer excites the king's passion, and so he devotes himself to her younger rival, with catastrophic results. When she

learns of her son's sudden reversal of fortune, she vows, against the cultural norm of the devoted wife (*pativrata*), to follow her beloved son into exile, only abandoning her plan when Rāma reminds her of her wifely duty.

### Kaikeyī

The story of Daśaratha's bewitching but ultimately treacherous junior wife serves as one of the traditional Indian patriarchy's cautionary tales about the seductive and corrupting influence of women. Initially portrayed as an innocent and trusting young woman delighted to learn of the impending consecration of her senior wife Kausalyā's son, Kaikeyī is easily persuaded by her cunning maid-servant, Mantharā, of the danger to her and her own son should Rāma be inaugurated as prince regent. She then allows herself to be manipulated into using her feminine wiles, as well as some unfulfilled vows of her husband, to force him to order the banishment of Rāma and the inauguration of Bharata in his stead. Although she appears to be quickly rehabilitated in the epic, she remains in the popular imagination a prime example of the shrewish wife who betrays and ultimately causes the death of her husband.

### The Animals

It will be recalled that a particular feature of the Rāma legend is that the story's archvillain, Rāvaṇa, had received a boon of invulnerability from all the various races of supernatural beings. He remained, however, vulnerable to "lower" beings, that is to say, humans and animals. It is for this reason (as well as the curse of Nandin) that, during the course of his campaign against Rāvaṇa, Rāma's principal allies, apart from his brother Lakṣmaṇa and Rāvaṇa's renegade brother Vibhiṣaṇa, are a vast horde of semidivine and partially civilized monkeys (*vānaras*).

The sometimes fairy-tale-like tenor of the poem also allows a few birds to enter the plot on specific occasions to assist Rāma. These include the great vulture Jaṭāyus, an old friend and ally of the Kosalan court who, in the *Aranyakāṇḍa*, gives his life in a vain attempt to rescue Sītā from the clutches of Rāvaṇa and who gives Rāma some information about the abduction; and Jaṭāyus's older brother, Sampāti, who tells the monkeys' southern search party where Rāvaṇa has taken Sītā. Also, at one point in the *Yuddhakāṇḍa*, when both Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa have been rendered *hors de combat* through the power of Indrajit's sinister serpent-weapons, the divine bird Garuḍa makes an appearance as a sort of *avis ex machina* to drive away the snakes, whose nemesis he is.

But aside from the boon of Rāvaṇa and the entertainment value of having the sometimes fearsome and sometimes comical monkeys as Rāma's often erratic sidekicks, there is, it seems, a higher thematic value in the introduction of the alternately valorous and cowardly simians. For the monkey kingdom of Kiṣkindhā represents a contrast to the predominantly righteous world of Ayodhyā, with its supremely deferential and self-disciplined heroes like Rāma, Bharata, and Lakṣmaṇa, who always subordinate their personal interests and desires to their sense of duty, righteousness, and familial harmony. By way of contrast, in the kingdom of the monkeys we encounter the perhaps more realistic themes of sibling rivalry, fraternal violence, and sensual excess that the poet tries to keep

as far away as possible from the scions of the solar dynasty. The monkeys also occasionally exhibit cowardice in battle, fleeing from formidable *rākṣasa* foes.

### **Sugrīva**

Sugrīva is a critical figure in the epic story. Without his assistance Rāma would have been hard-pressed to locate his abducted wife and would have found it virtually impossible to recruit a force capable of confronting the supernaturally powerful and heavily armed forces of Rāvaṇa. Nonetheless, as an epic hero, Sugrīva is portrayed as cruel, impetuous, self-serving, somewhat cowardly, and something of a libertine.

Banished by his elder and more powerful brother, the monkey king Vālin, Sugrīva is forced to cower on a secure hilltop with only a small coterie of loyalists. When Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, searching for the abducted Sītā, come near, he is terrified and sends his counselor Hanumān in disguise to see who they are and what they want. After hearing Rāma's story, Sugrīva sees an opportunity to dispose of his feared brother and seize his kingdom and his wife, who was stolen from him, he claims, by Vālin. He tells Rāma a self-serving story about how he came to be exiled when, after falsely believing his brother dead, he took over his throne and his harem, only to be roughly handled and expelled when Vālin returned. Sugrīva forges a pact with Rāma to the effect that if the prince will kill his mighty elder brother for him and place him on the throne, he will place the vast hordes of monkeys, whom he will then command, at Rāma's service. He will then order the monkeys to scour the world for the abducted Sītā and to assist in the campaign to defeat her abductor and bring her back. To fulfill his part of the bargain Rāma instructs Sugrīva to challenge his brother to a single combat, during which Rāma will shoot Vālin from ambush. The brothers fight and Sugrīva is beaten, but Rāma, claiming that he could not tell the two apart, refrains from acting. He then equips Sugrīva with a floral garland to distinguish him from his brother. As the brothers fight a second time, Rāma mortally wounds Vālin. He then engages in a debate with the dying monkey in an effort to justify his action.

Because of his troops' inability to move freely during the rainy season, Sugrīva is unable to carry out his part of the agreement until the autumn. However, even when the rains have ceased and the roads are passable, he shows no inclination to discharge his obligation, instead immersing himself in the sybaritic pleasures of sex, food, and drink. Finally, his patience exhausted, Rāma sends Lakṣmaṇa to remind the monkey, under threat of death, to rouse himself to action and fulfill his sworn oath. Only then does Sugrīva send out search parties and, once Sītā has been located, muster the simian hosts for battle. We learn that the somewhat undisciplined monkey is also cruel: when his southern search party, thinking that they have failed, decide not to return to Kiṣkindhā, they make this choice because they fear that their master will put them to death. During the war in Laṅkā, however, Sugrīva fights valiantly and performs various heroic feats.

### **Vālin**

This remarkable figure cannot be fully described independently of his brother and mortal enemy, Sugrīva. For it is only through Rāma's somewhat controversial killing of this king of the monkeys that he is able to secure the promise from

Sugrīva to use his control of the monkey forces, once he is installed on the throne of his dead brother, to scour the world to find the abducted princess Sitā.

But Vālin has his own history that helps us to understand Rāma's decision to act on behalf of Sugrīva without ever meeting Vālin or hearing his side of the story of the rift between the simian brothers. That story is yet another example of the theme of violent or sublimated fraternal conflict and disinheritance of an older claimant to a throne that runs like a thread through both the *Rāmāyaṇa* and the *Mahābhārata*. In this, it not only echoes the deflected succession struggle between Rāma and Bharata but foreshadows as well the parallel conflict in the royal family of the *rākṣasas* between Rāvaṇa and his younger brother Vibhiṣaṇa, which, like the conflict in *Kiṣkindhā*, will end only when Rāma kills the elder and installs the younger on the throne.

Vālin is not only the elder brother and, by the normative practice of primogeniture, the rightful king of the monkeys. He is also, as the son of the king of the gods, Indra, more powerful than Sugrīva, the son of Sūrya, the sun god. In fact, he is represented in the epic as one of only two individuals powerful enough to best Rāvaṇa himself in combat. At the end of the *Uttarakāṇḍa*'s lengthy account of the mighty *rākṣasa*'s victorious campaigns against human kings, supernatural beings, and even the gods themselves, Rāma inquires of the sage Agastya, who had been narrating this account, if there were no beings anywhere powerful enough to overcome the might of the ten-headed lord of the *rākṣasas*. In reply, the sage tells him of two individuals who accomplished this all-but-impossible feat. The first is the legendary thousand-armed king of Māhiṣmatī, Arjuna Kārtavīrya, who bested the *rākṣasa* in a wrestling match and made him his prisoner. The second is Vālin, who, when Rāvaṇa attempts to take him by surprise, whirls around, pinions him, and, tucking the *rākṣasa* lord in his armpit, flies to the four oceans to perform his ritual baths. In both of these stories, the vanquishers of Rāvaṇa end up forging a firm friendship with him. In the latter case, this may explain why Rāma chose to ally himself with Sugrīva instead of the far more powerful Vālin.

When Rāma finally intervenes in a battle between the monkey brothers and mortally wounds Vālin from ambush, the dying monkey rebukes him for shooting him in such a fashion, and the two hold an extensive debate on the propriety of such an attack. This goes back and forth on different grounds until Vālin acknowledges the authority of Rāma as the representative of the royal power of Kosala and dies reconciled to the justice of his death. Some hint of uneasiness with the whole proceeding may be divined from the fact that even after the consecration of Sugrīva in place of his slain elder, Rāma sees to it that the heir apparent to the monkey throne is Aṅgada, Vālin's son, and not any offspring of his successor.

## Hanumān

Hanumān, the swift and powerful son of the wind god, is one of the towering figures in the *Rāmāyaṇa* writ large, and he is an important divinity in his own right in Hinduism and in other related Asian religious traditions. For Vālmiki and later authors on the Rāma theme, he is the ultimate devotee of Rāma and Sitā and the exemplar of what is known in Vaiṣṇava theology as *dāsyabhāva*, the emotive stance of devotional service to one's chosen divinity.

Introduced first in the *Kiṣkindhākāṇḍa* as a clever counselor of Sugrīva, Hanumān is uniquely entrusted with Rāma's signet ring as a token of recognition when he is included in the southern search party under the leadership of Aṅgada, Vālin's son. As the son of the wind god, he is also the only monkey powerful enough to leap across the vast expanse of the ocean to search Laṅkā for the abducted princess. Once there, he finds and comforts Sītā, causes general havoc on the island, and defeats many of Rāvaṇa's warriors. Finally, he allows himself to be captured by Indrajit so that, when dragged in front of the *rākṣasa* king, he can rebuke him. As a punishment, Hanumān's tail is set alight, but he then uses it to set fire to the city before returning to the mainland to report to Sugrīva and Rāma.

During the war, Hanumān performs many feats of valor in battle and, most iconically, twice flies from Laṅkā to the Himalayas and back to fetch a mountain of healing herbs to cure and restore Rāma, Lakṣmaṇa, and the monkeys in general when they are wounded or struck down by the fearsome Indrajit. After the war and the consecration of Rāma, he proves himself to be the most passionate of Rāma's devotees but is denied the privilege of following his lord to the heavenly realm, as he is instructed to remain in the world as long as the *Rāmāyaṇa* continues to be sung among the people. As the epic tale remains current in its many versions until the present day, Hanumān is regarded as one of the Indian tradition's group of seven *cirajīvins*, "long-lived ones," who live on from one cosmic era to another. In addition to the account of his feats in service of Rāma, the *Uttarakāṇḍa* provides a charming account of the monkey hero's mischievous childhood.

### The Lesser Monkeys

Among the hundreds of millions and even billions of monkeys that the *Rāmāyaṇa* tells us made up Rāma's expeditionary force, there are a number who, if not of the level of significance of Sugrīva and Hanumān, still occupy specific important roles in the course of the great war. Among these are Prince Aṅgada, son of Vālin and the leader of the southern search party, who launches a solo attack on Rāvaṇa's palace; the monkey engineer and architect Nala, who designs and supervises the construction of the epic's famous bridge across the ocean, enabling the monkey army to cross over to Laṅkā; Jāmbavān, the aged king of the *rākṣas* (in later versions of the story he is often represented as a bear), who directs Hanumān to the Himalayas in search of medicinal herbs; and the simian physician Suṣeṇa, who similarly instructs Hanumān before his second flight to the Himalayas and who employs the herbs to save the life of the mortally wounded Lakṣmaṇa.

### The Rākṣasas

As the epic action shifts from the realm of the monkeys, which, as we have seen, represents a moral universe more like the "natural," observable condition of humanity, with its power struggles, sensual excess, violence, and fraternal rivalries, to the island kingdom of Laṅkā, we see yet another and, indeed, ultimate shift in and degradation of the norms of *dharma*, "righteousness," as it is observed and practiced in Ayodhyā. Laṅkā is the kingdom of the *rākṣasas*, violent,

bloodthirsty, and sexually promiscuous parodies of the ideals of Aryan culture and society that the epic seeks to preach. These are the blood-guzzling (*rudhirāśana*), night-roaming (*niśācara*) *rākṣasas* under the tyrannical rule of their king, Rāvaṇa, who is the radical opposite of Rāma and the trampler of all the norms and values of vedic-Hindu civilization.

That said, it is noteworthy that not all of the *rākṣasas* and their female counterparts, the *rākṣasa* women (*rākṣasīs*), are monolithically evil. Some of the womenfolk actually aid and support Sitā in her terror and desolation, while one of the *rākṣasa* princes comes to be revered as the epitome of righteousness and devotion to Rāma. Even the very worst of them, Rāvaṇa himself, is allowed a certain amount of justification for his evil nature and, in the end, once dead, is given a surprisingly sympathetic send-off by his enemy Rāma.

One might also keep in mind that the poet portrays two rather different categories of *rākṣasas*, both of which are seen as a menace to the society, culture, and civilization of the Aryans. On the one hand, there are what we might think of as the aristocratic urban elite of the race, who inhabit the glittering palaces and mansions of Laṅkā and who appear to share the political and even religious norms of their human foes. These include Rāvaṇa and his relatives as well as his ministers and his generals. On the other hand, the poem also shows us an even more horrific and feral type of solitary forest *rākṣasa*—those who haunt the wilderness, gorging themselves on the flesh and blood of humans and animals that cross their path.

## Rāvaṇa

Rāvaṇa, the towering and monstrous antagonist of the epic hero, is, at least in Vālmiki's portrayal, a more interesting and complex figure than the crude, brutal, and lecherous villain of countless later texts and performative media as well as in the popular imagination. Thus, in spite of his overweening arrogance, lust, and sexual predation, as well as the havoc his aggression wreaks throughout the three worlds, he is nonetheless represented in the *Sundarakāṇḍa* as a rather glorious potentate, a passionate lover, a husband mourned by his many wives, and, at one point in the *Yuddhakāṇḍa*, a figure who finally comes to realize the folly of his ultimate transgression. But in the grand account of his career in the epic's final book, the *Uttarakāṇḍa*, we see different aspects of the character of this monstrous but fascinating antihero and are given, interestingly, some insight into its formation.

The very first things we learn about Rāvaṇa in this account take place before he is born or even conceived, and they are highly determinative of his character. Rāvaṇa's mother, Kaikāsī, was the child of the powerful *rākṣasa* ascetic Sumālin. Sumālin, uninterested in negotiating a marriage for his daughter, sends the innocent girl off on her own to ask the brahman sage Viśravas, the son of the seer Pulastya and grandson of Lord Brahmā himself, to marry her. At her father's command, she approaches Viśravas although he is in a state of consecration as he performs the vedic *agnihotra* rite. The poet describes the moment as “that fearsome hour (*dāruṇā velā*).”

Viśravas determines, through his supernatural mental powers, that Kaikāsī wishes to marry him and bear his children. He consents to this but warns her that, since she approached him at such a fearsome hour, she will give birth to

fearsome and cruel *rākṣasa* children. Horrified by this pronouncement, she pleads that such horrible sons would not be worthy of a descendant of Lord Brahmā, Viśravaś's grandfather. The sage partially relents, promising that her youngest son alone, Vibhīṣaṇa, will be righteous and worthy of his noble lineage. Thus, in due time, Kaikasī gives birth to three sons, Rāvaṇa, Kumbhakarṇa, and the righteous Vibhīṣaṇa, as well as a daughter, Śūrpaṅakhā. The birth of her eldest, Rāvaṇa, is accompanied by dire omens, as recounted later by Agastya:

After some time, Rāma, the young girl, who had been addressed in this fashion, gave birth to a horrendous and very fearsome child, who had the form of a *rākṣasa*. He had ten heads, huge fangs, and he looked like a heap of black collyrium. He had coppery lips, twenty arms, huge mouths, and hair that glowed like fire. The moment he was born, jackals, their mouths emitting flames, and other carnivorous beasts circled in a clockwise direction. The god rained down blood, and the clouds made a harsh rumbling. The sun vanished from the sky, and great meteors crashed to the ground.<sup>15</sup>

The episode is a curious and disturbing one in which an innocent error of timing on the part of a young girl has hideous consequences for her yet-to-be-conceived children, imposed by their own father. Thus, according to the tale, Rāvaṇa is hardly to be held wholly accountable for his evil nature, which stems largely from his mother's minor and unintentional transgression and his father's horrible and excessively cruel overreaction to it. Moreover, Rāvaṇa's parental difficulties do not end with his father's prenatal curse. Although he is cursed to be born with an inherently evil nature, it is his mother who, in her greed and ambition, goads him into a state of bitter envy and ultimately hostility toward his glorious elder half brother, Kubera, the god of wealth. In a fit of sibling rivalry, Rāvaṇa vows to equal or surpass Kubera in power and glory, and it is this mission that sets him on his course of fearsome asceticism so that he can acquire the boons that will enable him to conquer and terrorize the triple world, starting with Kubera himself.

Rāvaṇa's aggressiveness and martial exploits are legendary, and he does not hesitate to challenge any representative of masculine power and authority, whether a king, a god, a great serpent, a demon, or even supreme deities such as Lord Śiva. And it even makes little difference to him if they are his kinsmen: he defeats and slays Kubera, and in the mad frenzy of battle he kills his brother-in-law, the *dānava* Vidyujihva, the husband of his sister, Śūrpaṅakhā. Neither does he hesitate to molest, seduce, abduct, and rape any woman he encounters. True to his cannibalistic *rākṣasa* nature, he also does not scruple to devour a messenger and a group of great seers who have assembled for a holy sacrifice.

There is no space here to list all of Rāvaṇa's many battles, rapes, and evil deeds. But the epic is sometimes at odds with itself in its accounts of his abductions of women. For example, in the *Sundarakāṇḍa*, when the poet describes the beautiful women of the *rākṣasa*'s harem, he says that none of them had been taken against their will but had been won over by his virtues and had never previously belonged to another man. Yet in the *Uttarakāṇḍa*, he is represented

<sup>15</sup> PVR 7.9.21–24.

as having brutally ripped his women, wailing and crying, from their husbands, brothers, and fathers. They then collectively curse him to ultimately die on account of a woman as requital for his depredations.

Yet despite Rāvaṇa's lengthy career of murder, rape, and mayhem and his brutal abduction of the epic hero's beloved wife, Rāma treats him remarkably gently. Not only does he offer to spare the *rākṣasa* if he returns Sītā willingly, but during their first encounter in battle the righteous prince, seeing that his foe is tiring, merely shoots off his diadem and dismisses him from the battlefield to rest up for the next encounter. Finally, once he has slain Rāvaṇa, Rāma orders Vibhīṣaṇa to give him full funerary honors according to the vedic cremation ritual, praises him as a great warrior, and declares an almost fraternal regard for him.

It is also worth noting that, although the fearsome king of the *rākṣasas* is generally regarded as a figure inimical to and dominant over all other powerful beings in the three worlds and ultimately vulnerable to the Supreme Divinity, Viṣṇu, alone, the *Uttarakāṇḍa* records three occasions on which he is outmatched by a superior rival with whom he then forges a friendly alliance. The first and best known of these occurs when Rāvaṇa, flying across the Himalayas, finds the motion of his vehicle arrested as he tries to pass over a grove where Lord Śiva is dallying with his wife. Enraged, the *rākṣasa* tries, in his unparalleled strength, to uproot the entire mountain. Śiva, however, is amused at the *rākṣasa*'s presumption and playfully presses down on the summit with his toe, crushing his mighty arms and causing him to utter a tremendous roar of pain. Pleased with the demon's strength and daring, and in commemoration of his mighty cry that reverberated throughout the universe, the god confers upon him the name Rāvaṇa, "He Who Makes the Worlds Reverberate with His Cries," thus replacing, for all practical purposes, the *rākṣasa*'s birth-name Daśagrīva, "Ten-necked." This episode, along with a single reference later in the book to Rāvaṇa's worship of a golden *liṅga*, is probably the inspiration for the tradition—not explicitly mentioned by Vālmiki—that Rāvaṇa was a devotee of Śiva.

Rāvaṇa also meets his match in the persons of the monkey king Vālin and the Haihaya monarch Arjuna Kārtavīrya, both of whom best him in wrestling matches and take him prisoner. Both episodes end with Rāvaṇa forming alliances with his new friends. In the former case, this may explain why Rāma forms an alliance with Sugrīva rather than with Vālin, his more powerful brother and Rāvaṇa's friend and ally.

### Vibhīṣaṇa

The only virtuous child of Kaikasī, Rāvaṇa's youngest brother, Vibhīṣaṇa, is one of the relatively few, but important, examples in the literature of a figure who is supposed to be evil, even demonic, by nature, but who turns out to be a paragon of virtue through first taking refuge (*śaraṇam*) with and then devoting himself to one or another of the forms of Viṣṇu, the Supreme Divinity. In this the *rākṣasa* ranks as an equal to the famous *asura* devotee, Prahlāda, who worshiped the Lord at the time of the Man-Lion (Narasimha) *avatāra*. Unable to tolerate his brother's evil ways and particularly his abduction and imprisonment of Sītā, Vibhīṣaṇa has the courage to speak truth to power in rebuking Rāvaṇa. This provokes a furious response: the *rākṣasa* king expels him from the court.

Vibhīṣaṇa then flies with four retainers across the sea to the southern shore of India, where Rāma and his army are encamped. He takes refuge (*śaraṇam*) at Rāma's feet, becoming, up until the present day, a paradigmatic example of salvation through this act. Once accepted, he renders many vital services to Rāma in the battle through his understanding of the military strength and defenses of Laṅkā, and especially through his innate ability to see through the many illusory devices and tricks of the *rākṣasas*. Rāma consecrates him as the king of the *rākṣasas*, even before defeating and killing Rāvaṇa, and the grateful *rākṣasa* grants him the use of his flying palace, the Puṣpaka. In the end, like that other great devotee of Rāma, Hanumān, Vibhīṣaṇa is denied permission to follow his Lord into the heavenly world, as Rāma orders him to remain on earth to govern the unruly *rākṣasas*. In this way, Vibhīṣaṇa, like the great monkey, joins the select group of the seven immortals of Indian legend, the *cirajīvins*, “long-lived ones.”

Vibhīṣaṇa's character, however, is not without a touch of ambivalence. Although he is highly regarded for his righteousness and courage in going over to Rāma's side in the war, he also earns a certain degree of censure in the Indian cultural context—which places a high premium on clan and family loyalty—for his betrayal of his own elder brother, no matter how evil he may have been. Thus, even in modernity, he is sometimes used as metaphor for a traitor to his own family, as in the Bengali saying “*ghore śotru bibhīṣon*,” “[he is] an enemy in the house, a Vibhīṣaṇa”).

### **Kumbhakarna**

Rāvaṇa's gargantuan brother Kumbhakarna is an example of Vālmiki's spectacular linking of the terrifying and comedic in a single character. He is so catastrophically voracious that the gods fear that, should he succeed in gaining additional powers through a boon for his austerities, he might literally devour the entire world. To avert this calamity, they trick him by getting the goddess of speech, Sarasvatī, to enter the giant's mouth, seize control of his vocal organs, and choose a boon for him. She chooses perpetual sleep, a boon the Creator happily confers.

During the war, when almost all of Rāvaṇa's champions have been slain, the *rākṣasa* king is forced to awaken the sleeping giant. His awakening is described in a grotesque and comically hyperbolic scene representing the extraordinary violence required to rouse the monster and the absurd amount of food and drink required to get him up and going. Once awake, he reports to his brother Rāvaṇa for his orders and, rather surprisingly, lectures him on statecraft, righteousness, and the folly of his ways. This elicits Rāvaṇa's only admission in the poem that it was a fatal error to abduct Sītā and to refuse Rāma's demand for her return. Nonetheless, as a dutiful brother, Kumbhakarna marches off to war and wreaks enormous havoc on the monkey army before being cut to pieces by Rāma's arrows. Even in his death he is massively destructive, his severed head and body, in the poet's hyperbolic description, causing enormous damage as they fall.

### **Indrajit**

The most powerful and terrifying of Rāvaṇa's allies—and indeed, his ultimate recourse other than his own immense martial power—is his son Meghanāda Rāvaṇi, who is often referred to by his nom de guerre, Indrajit, “Conqueror of

Indra.” This is a figure who combines the skill and strength of a superb warrior with the magical powers of a sorcerer. Indeed, when a group of seers and sages arrives to congratulate Rāma on his consecration, they remark that they regarded Indrajit as a more fearsome adversary than his father. Deriving his powers both from boons and from weapons granted him by Brahmā and through a series of dark parodies of the vedic sacrifice, he is able to capture Hanumān, bind Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa in the deadly coils of his serpent-weapons, and invisibly strike down the heroic brothers and their entire army from a flying chariot. It is only when Lakṣmaṇa is able to interrupt the dark ritual that grants Indrajit his powers that the prince can finally dispatch him after a lengthy and horrific duel.

This extraordinary figure, sinister though he is, has to a certain extent captured the imagination of India, where the name Indrajit is often conferred by parents on their sons and who was made the wronged and tragic hero of his own epic poem by the nineteenth-century Bengali poet and playwright Michael Madhusudana Dutt in his epic poem the *Meghnad Badh Kāvya*, “The Killing of Meghanāda.”

### The Minor Rākṣasas

Aside from the towering figure of Rāvaṇa and some of his principal kinsmen, generals, and ministers, a number of other *rākṣasas* play various roles in the epic story from outside the Laṅkā court. One group constitutes a sort of military outpost of the *rākṣasa* kingdom in the Daṇḍaka forest of the Indian peninsula. It is these *rākṣasa* forces, led by Rāvaṇa’s relatives Khara, Dūṣaṇa, and Trīśiras, that directly harass the holy forest sages, whom Rāma has vowed to protect. And it is they and their hosts who, seeking to avenge the mutilation of Śūrpaṇakhā, are slaughtered by Rāma. One noteworthy figure is Mārīca. Along with his brother Subāhu, Mārīca harasses the ashram of Viśvāmitra in the *Bālakāṇḍa*, thus providing the rationale for Viśvāmitra’s fateful journey to Ayodhyā. His life is spared by Rāma when his brother is slain, but he returns to the narrative in the *Aranyakāṇḍa*. There, under the threat of death from his master Rāvaṇa, he is compelled to take on the form of the famous golden deer to lure first Rāma and then Lakṣmaṇa away from their forest home, only to be finally slain by the former.

In addition to these figures, there is also a class of grotesque, solitary *rākṣasas* who haunt the forest, gorging on game and even humans. Some of these are represented not as true *rākṣasas* by birth but rather as celestial beings who, laboring under curses, inhabit their degraded forms until they are released through death at Rāma’s hands and return to their respective celestial forms. These *rākṣasas*, encountered in the *Aranyakāṇḍa*, include the monstrous Virādha, who for a brief moment seizes and tries to run off with Sitā, in a foreshadowing of her abduction by Rāvaṇa; and the deformed Kabandha, who, before his death, directs Rāma to the monkey prince Sugrīva for assistance in locating and recovering his stolen wife. The poem’s final book, the *Uttarakāṇḍa*, shows us another example of the solitary *rākṣasa* in the terrifying Lavaṇa, who is slain by Śatrughna.

### The Rākṣasa Women

Like their menfolk, the *rākṣasa* women (*rākṣasīs*) show a marked diversity of character among themselves. Rāma’s first test of valor is his task of killing the monstrous forest *rākṣasa* woman Tāṭakā, who blocks the path of Viśvāmitra and

(continued...)

## Index

- abandonment: of child, 477, 732 (*see also* child(ren)); of Lañkā by *rākṣasas*, 731, 740, 744; of Sitā by Rāma, 6, 17–19, 794–98
- abducted women: curse Rāvaṇa, 16, 29–30; grief of, 762–63
- abduction: of daughters of serpents, *yakṣas*, *rākṣasas*, men, *daityas*, and *dānavas* by Rāvaṇa, 5, 16, 762–63; of Kumbhīnāsī by Madhu, 765; of Śacī by Anuhlāda, 396; of Sitā by Rāvaṇa, 12–15, 24, 30, 32, 52, 56, 320–27;—Brahmā witnesses, 324;—creatures seem to mourn, 325;—crow foretells, 351;—foreshadowing of, 30;—Jaṭāyus attempts to stop, 13, 321–23;—monkeys witness, 326–27;—as pivotal event of poem, 12;—prophecy of, by Niśākara, 422;—Rāvaṇa plots, 303–4;—recalled, 355–57; 413, 434, 482, 519–20, 787;—rumors arise about, 793;—Supārśva as witness to, 420;—by Virādha, 12, 32, 52, 265–267;—recalled, 460, 677; of Takṣaka’s wife, by Rāvaṇa, 299; of wife of Sugrīva, 361; of women by Rāvaṇa, 16, 29, 30, 762–63
- Abhijit: quarter facing, 423
- abhijit* (rite), 68
- Abhira: region to be searched by southern search party, 402
- adharma*. *See* unrighteousness
- Ādhūtarajasa: son of Kuśa (2), 84
- adhyāyas* (chapters): of *Mahābhārata*, 9n
- Ādikavi, First Poet: Vālmīki as, 4
- Ādikāvya, First Poem: *Rāmāyaṇa* as, 4
- Aditi: gives birth to Dhātṛ, 230;—to gods, 97–98, 280, 744;—to Viṣṇu, 82; Indra son of, 71; Māruta son of, 785; Rāma as son of, 849; sister of Diti, 744; Vāyu (Māruta) son of, 785; wife of Kaśyapa, 280, 744
- Āditya (sun god), 403, 780. *See also* Sūrya
- āditya(s)* (class of divinities): 280, 403, 455, 768, 770–71, 772, 842; sons of Aditi, accept Surā, 98
- Aeneid*, 3
- Agastya (brahman), 166; ascetic power of, 277, 279; associated with southern quarter, 181, 276, 407, 707, 728; attends Rāma’s *aśvamedha*, 841; austerities of, 823; birth of, from a pot, 804; curses Mārīca and Tātaka, 78; celestial ornament, accepts from Śveta;—gives to Rāma, 824;—made by Viśvakarman, 824;—Rāma accepts, 726; deeds of, recounted, 276–77; describes austerities of Rāvaṇa and his brothers, 742; directs Rāma to Pañcavaṭī, 279; encounter of, with Ilvala and Vātāpi, 275–76, 312; etymology of name of, 275; fasting of, 277; gives celestial jewel/ornament to Rāma, 824;—arrow and quivers of Indra to Rāma, 278; gods instruct Rāma to visit ashram of, 823; identifies Rāma as Viṣṇu, 740; makes south safe from *rākṣasas*, 276; monkeys see, on Mount Malaya, 401; places Mahendra on southern shore, 401; as pot-born sage, 729, 823, 824, 827, 829; praises Hanumān, 787; praises Sitā, 278–79; Rāma asks Sutiḥṣṇa directions to ashram of, 274–75;—dwells in heart of, 824;—gives gifts to, 166;—receives divine weapons from, 278;—visits ashram of, with gods, 17, 18, 823–29;—visits ashram of, with Lakṣmaṇa and Sitā, 277–79; region of, 181; reminds Rāma that he killed Vālin, 782; role of, in *Uttarakāṇḍa*, 16–17, 19, 26, 29; tells cautionary tales, 16–17;—of Daṇḍa, 826–28;—of Śveta, 824–26; tells history of celestial ornament/jewel, 824–26;—desolation of the Daṇḍaka Forest, 826–28;—Hanumān’s childhood, 783–87;—*rākṣasas*, Rāvaṇa, and Rāvaṇa’s kin, 16–17, 729–82; Sutiḥṣṇa directs Rāma to ashram of, 275; tells genealogy of Kubera, 729–33; Viśvakarman builds palace for, 401; on women’s nature, 279
- Agastya’s brother: ashram of, 52, 275–76
- Agni (god of fire), 108, 114, 188, *passim*: Anala name of, 612; banner of, smoke, 188; as bearer or eater of oblations, 282, 514, 516, 564, 578, 708, 793; divine weapon or weapon-spell (*astra*) of, 80, 108, 606–7, 639, 653, 685, 751; does not harm Hanumān, 514;—Sitā, 516; dwells in Arjuna’s firepit, 775; Ganges gives birth to child of, 732; gods worship Viṣṇu with, 854; as having golden seed, 775; Indrajit sacrifices to, 641; Indrajit

Agni (god of fire) (*continued*)

worships, 773; as leader of gods, 817, 823, 832; as *puṛohita* of the gods, 89; role of, in Skanda's birth, 89–90, 559; and Śiva's semen, 88–89; Sītā enters, 708;—prays to, 513–14; as Vaiśvānara, 785; as witness, 356, 358, 359, 523, 793, 782;—of nonaggression pact of Arjuna-Rāvaṇa, 780;—of Rāvaṇa-Nivātakavacas alliance, 761;—of Sītā's ordeal by fire, 708, 710; words of, to Ganges, 89;—to Indra, 101 as wrathful, 767; Yama attended by, 757  
*agnihotra* (rite), 28, 87, 104, 105, 119, 174, 189, 211, 229, 262, 268, 306, 567, 571, 741, 786, 853  
*agniparikṣa*. See ordeal by fire  
*agniśtoma* (sacrifice), 567, 764, 845  
agriculture: increases in Dvāpara Yuga, 821  
Ahalāyā: austerities of, 100; Brahmā creates, 774; etymology of name of, 774; Gautama curses, 101, 774; Indra rapes, 774;—seduces, 100–101; loses distinction as only beautiful woman, 774–75; story of, in *Bālakāṇḍa*, 100–102;—in *Uttarakāṇḍa*, 774–75  
Aikṣvāka(s): Daśaratha, 121, 145, 167, 169, 171; Kurus, 36; Rāma, 77, 182, 184; Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 342  
Airāvata (elephant), 290, 299; Hanumān mistakes, for fruit, 784; Indra seeks Hanumān on, 784; as mount of Indra, 290, 444, 517, 540, 635, 772; son of Irāvati, 280; Sudarśana born in lineage of, 630; as world guardian, 280  
Airāvata (mountain), 206  
Aiṣika (weapon-spell): of Atikāya, 639  
*ajas* or *ājas* (class of ascetics), 302–3  
Ajātaśatru (king of Magadha): defeats *janapada* of Kosala, 36  
Akampana (*rākṣasa* troop leader) (1), Hanumān fights and kills, 596–98; killing of recalled, 715, 728; leads *rākṣasa* troops into battle, 596–97; minister of Rāvaṇa, 769; Rāvaṇa hears of death of, 599; son of Sumālin and Ketumati, 734  
Akampana (*rākṣasa* troop leader) (2), 603, 668  
Akṣa (son of Rāvaṇa): Hanumān fights and kills, 53, 504–6; Rāvaṇa sends to fight Hanumān, 503  
Alambuṣā (*gandharva* woman), 227–28  
Alambuṣā (mother of Viśāla), 99  
Alarka: gives his eyes to brahman, 145  
alliance: of Rāma and Sugrīva, 13, 25, 356, 367; of Rāvaṇa and Nivātkavacas, 761  
ally/allies: Bharata assembles, to aid Rāma, 787; of Bharata, 240; of Daśaratha, 74, 84;

dismissal of, by Rāma, 17, 787–89; Guha as, of Kosalan court, 41; of House of Ikṣvāku, 226, 254; Jāṭāyus as, of Kosalan court, 24; Kabandha makes, known to Rāma, 344–45; Kumbhakarna devours, 626; Lakṣmaṇa as, of Rāma, 249; monkeys as Rāma's, 15, 70, 393, 495, 535; Prataradana as, of Rāma, 787; of Rāma, 19, 24, 488, 705, 707–8, 711, 713, 719; Rāma and Sugrīva as, 358, 367, 384, 392–93, 396, 483, 486, 488, 522–23, 590, 715; of Rāvaṇa, 31, 323, 488; Sugrīva and Vibhīṣaṇa as Rāma's closest, 699; of Sugrīva, 384, 590; treatment of, 384–85; Vibhīṣaṇa as, of Rāma, 5, 15, 56, 551–52, 702; of Viśvāmītra, 104  
alms: daughter as, 730  
Amarāvati (Indra's heaven), 58–59, 437, 439, 575, 630, 650, 716, 731, 734, 746, 755, 780; Laṅkā compared to, 319  
Ambarīṣa, 252; genealogy of, 122; sacrifice of, 113–14  
ambush: of Vālin by Rāma, 13, 368  
Aṃśumant (name for the sun), 349  
Aṃśumant (son of Asamañja), 96; attains heaven, 94; genealogy of, 122, 252; searches for Sagara's horse, 93–94; son of Asamañja, 91, 93; unable to bring Ganges to earth, 94  
amulet: Kausalyā gives, to Rāma, 159; Vālmiki gives, to Lava and Kuśa, 813  
Anala. See Agni  
Anala (*rākṣasa*): minister of Vibhīṣaṇa, 573; son of Mālin, 734  
Analā (1): one of Dakṣa's sixty daughters, 280; brings forth fruit trees, 280  
Analā (2): relates information to Sītā, 489; Vibhīṣaṇa's eldest daughter, 489  
Analā (3): as daughter of Mālyavān and Sundari, 734; as granddaughter of Mālyavān, 765; mother of Kumbhinasi, 765, 808  
Ananta (thousand-headed god), 399  
Anarāya: father of Pṛthu 122, 252; Rāvaṇa fights and kills, 16, 755–56  
Anasūyā (ascetic woman), 56; advises Sītā on wifely duties and devotions, 260; asceticism of, 259; audience of, with Sītā, 259–63; created roots and fruits and caused the Jāhnavī to flow, 259; description of, 259; gives gifts to Sītā, 261; reduced ten nights to one, 259; Sītā tells, about birth and marriage, 261–62; wife of Atri, 259  
ancestor(s): of Bhagiratha, flooded with water, 96; Dilīpa unable to save, 94  
Andhaka, (*asura*), 298, 581, 736

- Andhra: region searched by southern search party, 400
- Aṅgada (monkey, son of Vālin), 13, 26–27, *passim*; allows monkeys to drink honeywine, 526; announces arrival of Lakṣmaṇa, 389; arrives in Kiṣkindhā, 397; attacks Rāvaṇa's palace, 579; carries Lakṣmaṇa to Laṅkā, 541; claims Kumbhakarṇa is scarecrow, 621; consecration of, as crown prince, 380–81; considers Vibhiṣaṇa suspect, 550; death of Vālin and, 373–74, 377, 379; decides to fast to death, 416, 417; declares prowess in jumping, 424; despondency of, 416; duty of Tārā toward, 375; escapes capture, 579; exhorts monkeys, 410, 423–24, 621–22;—southern search party, 410; fights and kills Kampana, 647–48; Hanumān exhorts, to remain loyal, 415;—Mahāpārśva, 682–83;—Narāntaka, 632–33; fights Indrajit, 581, 583; grief of, 379, 389, 486; guards southern gate, 573–74, 577; Hanumān rebuffs, 415;—reports to, 518–19; humility of, 530; instructions of Tārā to, 376–77; Jāmbavān discourages, from jumping, 424–25; kills *asura*, 409–10; kingly qualities of, 415; as leader of southern search party, 27, 400, 407; as messenger of Rāma, 578–79; monkeys praise, 530; proposes killing Rāvaṇa and rescuing Sītā, 525; *rākṣasas* capture, 579; Rāma gives armlets to, 726; reports alliance between Rāma and Sugrīva, 367; reports Hanumān's success, 525; and Saṃpāti converse, 417–18, 420–23; Saṃpāti tells, of meeting with Niśākara, 420–22; smashes pinnacle of Rāvaṇa's palace, 579; son of Kaikeyī (Bharata) embraces, 722; strikes Dadhimukha, 528; struck down in battle, 643, 648; and Sugrīva converse, 414, 415–16; Tārā hears information from, 367; tells Saṃpāti of fight between Jaṭāyus and Rāvaṇa, 417–18;—story of Rāma, 417–18; terror of, at arrival of Lakṣmaṇa, 388–89; urges monkeys to fast to death, 414; and Vālin, 372, 376; vows to fast to death, 414, 416
- Aṅgada (son of Lakṣmaṇa): consecration of, in Aṅgadiyā, 847
- Aṅgadiyā (city): Rāma finds, 847
- Aṅgārakā (shadow-catching *rākṣasa* woman), 401. *See also* Siṃhikā
- Aṅgiras, 280, 846; Gārgya son of, 845; Nimi chooses, to perform sacrifice, 802
- Aṅgirasas: curse Hanumān, 786
- Anila (*rākṣasa*): son of Mālin, 734
- Anila (wind god), 427, 455, 505; Hanumān son of, 453, 564, 606, 624, 634, 635, 650
- animals: as *rākṣasa* mounts, 736, 765, 771; eating of five-clawed, 370; gods take on forms of, 754; of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 24–26
- Añjana: ability of, to take form at will, 425–26; an *apsaras* (Puñjikasthalā), 425; infatuation of Māruta with, 426; mother of Hanumān, 426, 643, 783, 786; story of, 425–26; wife of Kesarin, 425, 783, 786
- Añjana (guardian elephant [*diggaja*]), 60, 733, 776, 778
- Añjana (mountain), 394
- another birth. *See* birth(s): reaping consequences of previous; reincarnation
- antelope skin. *See* black antelope(s): wearing of hide of
- anuṣṭubh* (type of meter), 8
- apes (*rākṣas*), 189, 231–32, 243, *passim*; birth of, 70–71, 854; Dhūmra leader of, 397, 559, 580, 622; gods take form as, 70–71; Jāmbavān as king of, 27, 540, 573–74, 591, 661–62, 658, 668, 672, 682, 788; live in Ayodhyā, 788; not native to Indian subcontinent, 46–47; number of, 393, 580; and Rāma, 789, 792, 844, 845, 852, 853; Rāma gives gifts to, 788; return to birth places, 854–55; seek protection of Vālin, 377; Sugrīva as lord of, 384, 486; Tārā as protector of, 375, translation of *rākṣas* as, 46–47. *See also* langur(s); monkeys
- apsaras(es)*, 96, 125, 127, *passim*; Bharadvāja invokes, to entertain Bharata, 227, 228; *dānavas* will not accept, 98; etymology of word, 98; Ghṛtācī (*see* Ghṛtācī); gods father sons on, 70; Hemā (*see* Hemā); Kumbhakarṇa devours seven, 743; Menakā (*see* Menakā); Pañcāpsaras lake of five, 274; produced from the churning of the ocean, 98; Puñjikasthalā, 425 (*see also* Añjanā); Rambhā (*see* Rambhā); Urvaśī (*see* Urvaśī)
- aptoryāma* rite, 68
- Araṅgā (daughter of Uśanas): as Bhārgava girl, 827; Daṇḍa rapes, 827–28; Uśanas Kāvya curses, 878a
- Araṇyakāṇḍa*, 9, 24, 32, 44, 264–350; synopsis of, 12–13
- Āraṇyakaparvan*, 36
- Ariṣṭa (mountain): Hanumān's return leap from, 516–18
- Ariṣṭanemin (sage), 837
- Arjuna Kārtavīrya: blocks flow of Narmadā, 777; captures Rāvaṇa, 779; defeats ministers of Rāvaṇa, 778; fells Prahasta in battle, 778; fights and defeats Rāvaṇa, 16, 26, 30, 777–78; as king of Haihayas,

Arjuna Kārtavīrya (*continued*)

775, 778, 780; ministers of, 775, 777–78; nonaggression pact of, with Rāvaṇa, 780, *purohitas* of (see *purohita(s)*: of Arjuna Kārtavīrya); releases Rāvaṇa, 780; story of, 775–80

army. *See* monkey army; *rākṣasa* army; southern search party

arrow(s): Agastya gives, to Rāma, 278; Brahmā gives, to Indra, 278, 298; extended simile of, of Rāma, 628;—of Rāvaṇa, 605;—of Viṣṇu, 737; Indra gives, 298;—to Agastya, 278; of Indrajit fell monkeys, 642–43;—pierce Lakṣmaṇa and Rāma, 584–85, 654–55;—serpent sons of Kadrū become, 592; of Kāma (see Kāma: arrows of); Nīla extracts, from Vālin, 377; of Rāma (see also Rāma: arrow(s) of); Rāma splits seven *sāla* trees with, 53, 363–64;—recalled, 366, 393; of Śatrughna enters Rasātala, 817; shape-shifting of, 583, 592, 690;—of Rāma, 690, 853; of Viṣṇu, 127–28, 817;—Rāma gives to Śatrughna, 810

Arthasādhaka (minister of Daśaratha), 60

Aruṇa (bird): father of Saṃpāti, 281; Saṃpāti son of, 486; son of Vinatā, 280–81

Aruṇa (mountain), 394

Arundhati: as exemplar of wifely obedience, 260; Sitā compared to, 279, 481; Sitā superior to, 701

Aryaman (name of an Āditya), 158

āryan civilization, 27–28

Aryan clans, 35

āryan conduct, 448, 452

Aryan culture, 28

Aryan kings, 133

Aryan society, 40

Āśāḍha: month of, 383

Asamañja, 122; Aṃśumant son of, 91; drowns children in Sarayū, 91, 170; father of Aṃśumant, 93; genealogy of, 152, 252; Sagara dispossesses, 170, 252; son of Sagara and Keśinī, 91

Aśaniprabha: Dvidida fights and kills, 581–82

ascetic(s), 12, 54, 58, *passim*; abduction of Sitā witnessed by, 324; appeal to Rāma for protection, 12, 258; ashrams of, in Daṇḍaka wilderness, 264, 271, 274 (see also ashram(s)); austerities of (see austerities); Bharata as, 16, 23, 214; Bharata wears clothing of, 257–58, 718; brahmans as, 263, 821, 845, *passim*; Daśaratha shoots, 198–99; Durvāsas as, 799, 850; duty of, toward guests, 278; emerges from Nimi's body, 805; fasting of, 264, 302, 348; fear *rākṣasas*, 273;

forest devoid of, 824; foretell Śabari's meeting with Rāma, 348; Garuḍa rescues 302–3; Hanumān vows to become, 455; Kāla in guise of, 848; Kumbhakarṇa as, 742; Lavaṇa oppresses, 809; live near Ganges, 796;—in Janasthāna, 838; Mārica as, 307; Mārica harrasses, 306; who mistreats guests eats own flesh in next world, 278, 825–26; Niśākara as, 421–22; practices of, 268–69; protection of, as duty of kings, 264–65, 269 (see also duty: of king with advisors); *rākṣasas* kill, 269; Rāma and Sitā approached by, 264; Rāma as, 144, 152, 175, 209, 237, 258, 306, 466, 566;—gives donations to, 845;—protects, 269, 273;—wears clothing of, 170 (see also barkcloth garments); Rāma's vow to, accomplished, 298; Rāvaṇa as false, 314–17; Śambūka as, 822; seats fit for, 807; seek Rāma's protection, 12, 258, 264–65, 269, 273; 807–9; show hospitality to Rāma, 264–65; Sitā desires to visit, 791; Vasiṣṭha as, 799; Vibhiṣaṇa as, 742; visit Sutikṣṇa, 269; in Yamunā region, 807. *See also ajas* or *ājas*

asceticism (*tapas*), 29, 41, 51, *passim*; of Anasūyā, 259; of Bhagiratha, 94; of Bharadvāja, 717; of Bharata, 214, 718; black antelope skin as mark of, 752, 764; destroyed by possessing weapons, 272; of Gautama, 101, 774; of Indrajit Meghanāda, 661, 764, 773; of Māṇḍakarṇi, 274; of Maya, 412, 746; of Merusāvarni, 403; of Niśākara, 421–22; practice of, and kshatriya class incongruous, 272; of Rāvaṇa, 29, 511, 742–43; of Śabari, 347–48; of Śambūka, 18, 822; of Śarabhaṅga, 267; of Sitā, 516; of Śiva, 89; social class (*varṇa*) and *yuga* restrictions on, 821–22; of Sutikṣṇa, 270; of Svayamprabhā, 413; of Vedavati, 752–53; of Viśravas, 730–31; of Viśvāmitra, 41, 76; of women, 797; Vālmiki gains insight through, 797. *See also* austerities

ascetic power, 277, 279; ability to kill *rākṣasas* with, 273; of Gautama, 101; of Indra, 502; of Māṇḍakarṇi, 274; of sages at Pampā, 347; of Umā, 87–88

ascetic practice (*tapas*): being underwater as, 765, 823; decapitation as, 299, 742; of the five fires, 110, 115, 742; hanging upside down as, 822; heroic posture as, 742, living on air as, 730; living on water as, 730; raising arms as, 94, 115, 742, 836; sleeping upside down in water as, 365; standing without support as,

- 836; taking no sustenance as, 730–31; in water, 836
- ascetic women: live near Vālmiki's ashram, 797. *See also* Anasūyā; Pārvatī; Śabari; Svayamprabhā; Vedavati
- ashram(s), 104, 113, 258, *passim*; of Agastya, 17, 18, 275, 276, 277, 278, 823–24; of Agastya's brother, 275; of ascetic family, 199; of ascetics in Daṇḍaka wilderness, 264, 271, 274, *passim*; of Atri, 259–63, 716; of Bali, 81–82; of Bharadvāja, 188–89, 221, 225–30, 255, 716; of Budha, 836–37; of courtesans, 62; of Cyavana, 814; of Durvāsas, 850; of the great Dwarf (*vāmana*) (*see* ashram(s): of Bali *this entry*); of Gautama, 100–101, 774, 802; of Gokarṇa, 742; on Gomati River, 795; of Kāma, 76–77; of Kubera Vaiśravaṇa, 730–31, 748; of Mataṅga on Ṛṣyamūka, 363, 408; of Niśākara, 421; of Pulastya, 730; of Rāma, 52, 189–90, 230, 236, 242–43, 281, 279, 284, 287, 304, 309–10, 323–24, 720; of Śabari, 348; sages and Rāma abandon, 258–59; of Śarabhaṅga, 267; of Śiva, 77; of Sutiḥṣṇa, 270, 274; of the Saptajanas, 365–66; of Tṛṇabindu, 729–30; of Uśanas Kāvya, 827–28; of *vaikhānasa* ascetics in northern quarter, 405; of Vālmiki, 6, 9, 17, 18, 19, 38, 55, 794–98, 800;—Lava and Kuśa live in, 57;—Śatrughna hears recitation of *Rāmāyaṇa* in, 818–19;—Śatrughna visits, 18, 812–14;—Sītā abandoned at, 795–98, 842;—Sītā gives birth in, 813; of Vasiṣṭha, 104–5, 107–8, 110, 798–99; Vibhaṇḍaka, 62; of Viśvāmitra, 10, 13, 32, 40, 80, 82, 115, 305 (*see also* Ashram of The Perfected Being); women of, 797; Yayāti enters, 807
- Ashram of the Perfected Being, 81–86, 100, 103; Rāma visits, 81–87
- Aśmanagara (city): Rāvaṇa conquers, 761
- Aśoka (minister of Daśaratha), 60, 204
- aśoka(s) (tree[s]), 281, 310, 330, *passim*; Sītā clings to, 472–73, 482
- aśoka grove: description of, of Rāvaṇa, 456–58; etymology of word, 334; Hanumān devastates, 498;—searches, 456–58; of Rāma, 725, 790–91; resembles young woman, 456
- astrologers: 65, 135; foretell Sītā's future, 588
- asura(s), 68, 75, 60, *passim*; Aṅgada kills, 409–10; as buffalo (*see* Dundubhi); Jayā bore fifty sons called Saṃhāras to destroy, 75; weapon-spells of, 685; etymology of word, 98; inhabit Pātāla, 432
- asvamedha (horse sacrifice), 18, 35, 356, 833; Agastya at Rāma's, 841; dear to Śiva, 837; of Daśaratha, 61, 64–71, 238, 356;—Kausalyā's role in, 67; feeding of brahmins during, 66–67, 838; gods perform, for Indra, 832–33; of Ila, 837; Lakṣmaṇa tells Rāma to perform, 833; Maheśvara tells Rāma to perform, 711; performed by Marutta, 837;—for obtaining sons, 61; purifies sin of *brahmahatyā*, 830–33; of Rāma, 18–19, 711, 726, 799, 837–45; of Sagara, 91–92
- Aśvapati, 207; Bharata and Śatrughna live with, 130
- Aśvapati (father of Kaikeyī). *See* Kaikeyī: daughter of Aśvapati
- Aśvapati (maternal uncle of Bharata), 130, 206, 845
- Aśvapati (Yudhājit): king of Kekaya, 206
- Aśvins, 75, 100, 103, *passim*; Dvidva and Mainda sons of, 397, 525, 564
- Atibalā (*mantra*): Viśvāmitra gives to Rāma, 76
- Atikāya (*rākṣasa*), 547, 603, 628, *passim*; Aiṣika divine weapon of, 639; army of slaughtered, 635; battles monkey army, 637; Brahmā grants boons to, 635–36; challenges Rāma, 637; chariot of, 630, 636–38; compared to Viṣṇu, 635; description of, 636–37; joins battle, 637; eager for battle, 629–30; Kumbhakarṇa paternal uncle of, 628; Lakṣmaṇa fights and kills, 637–40;—recalled, 715; leads *rākṣasas* into battle, 629–30; Rāma questions Vibhiṣaṇa about, 736; son of Rāvaṇa, 630; terrifies monkey army with sound of bow, 635
- atirātra (sacrifice), 67, 68, 645, 845
- Atri, ashram of, 259–63, 716; Durvāsas son of, 798; Nimi asks, to perform sacrifice, 802; one of the seven great seers, 728
- auspicious glow, 791; as sign of life (vital glow), 586, 589, 824; as sign of pregnancy, 791
- auspicious omen(s): clockwise direction as, 641, 653; Hanumān observes, 515; presage victory for Rāma, 478, 540–41; Sītā observes, 478, 481; Trijāṭā observes in dream, 376. *See also* inauspicious omens; omen(s)
- auspicious signs: of abducted women, 764; all were endowed with, 727; bindi as, 282, 325; children of Krodhavaśā bear, 280; of Kuśa and Lava, 57; Lakṣmaṇa, one of, 179, 184, 332, 344, 383, 386, 395, 485, 553, 655, 660, 662, 665, 671, 688, 792, 809, 822; of Prajāpati's servant, 69; Rāma marked with, 51, 485–86;—observes, 693; of sacrificial horse, 837–38; Sītā marked with, 588; of royal elephant, 160

- austerities, 10, 18, 69, *passim*; absence of, when dead as source of regret, 750; of ascetics, 268–69; of Bhagiratha, 94; of Bharata, 283; of Budha, 835, 836; of Daśaratha, 339; of Diti, 98–99; eating once a month as, 94; of five fires, 94; of Gautama and Ahalyā, 100; javelin of Maya gained through, 746; of Kubera Vaiśravaṇa, 730–31; of Kumbhakarna, 742; of Kuśanābha's daughters, 85; of Mālin, Mālyavān, and Sumālin, 733; performed underwater, 765, 823; as permissible for various social classes, 821–22; of Rāvaṇa 742–43; raising arms as, 94, 115, 742, 836; of Śambūka, 822; of Śarabhaṅga, 268; of Śiva and Umā, 87–88; of Suketu, 78; of Sutikṣṇa, 270; of Śveta, 825–26; of Tṛṇabindu, 729; of Vaiśravaṇa related to Rāvaṇa, 748; of Vālmiki, 797, 842; of Vedavati, 752–53; of Vibhiṣaṇa 742; of Viśvāmitra, 107–17; of Vṛtra, 831; women engaged in, 797. *See also* asceticism; ascetic practice
- auto-decapitation: Brahmā stops Rāvaṇa's, 299, 742–43
- autumn, 381, 382, 384. *passim*; commencement of, 385, 389; description of, 386
- āvartini* spell: Budha recites, 835
- avatāra* (incarnation): theory of, 4–5, 5n, 21, 38
- avatāra* (incarnation) of Viṣṇu: Buddha as, 21; to kill Rāvaṇa, 10; Kṛṣṇa as, 35, 40; Narasiṃha (Man-Lion) as, 30; Rāma as, 4, 5n, 9, 11, 35, 40; Rāma Jāmadagnya (Paraśurāma) as, 21; sons of Daśaratha as, 4
- avis ex machina*, Garuḍa as, 24
- Ayodhyā, 10, 36, 58–60, 128, 137–38, 206–7, 256–57; grief of, 174–75, 185, 191–92, 194
- Ayodhyākāṇḍa*, 130–263; synopsis of, 9, 11–12
- Babhru (*gandharva* lord), 402
- Bahli/Bahlika, 204; horses of, 60; kingdom of, ruled by Ila, 833–37; western search party sent to, 402, 404
- Bahlikas, 833
- bahusuvarnaka* (sacrifice): of Indrajit, 764
- Balā (*mantra*): Viśvāmitra gives to Rāma, 75
- Bālakāṇḍa*, 51–129; synopsis of, 9–11
- bali* (offerings): dogs eating, as inauspicious omen, 571
- Bali Vairocana (*asura*), 145, 335, 640, 649; and Indra, 768, 772, 779; Jāmbavān at sacrifice of, 424; Rāma as Viṣṇu at sacrifice of, 710; story of, 81–82; and Viṣṇu (Nārāyaṇa), 779
- bandins* (panegyrists), 35
- banishment. *See* abandonment; exile
- bards (*sūtas*), 137, 148, 159, *passim*; Lava and Kuśa as, 6, 10, 17–19, 840–42, 844, 851–52
- barkcloth garments, 162, 198, 233, 262, 264, 270, 274, 276, 333, 348, 786; of Bharata, 224, 244, 258, 718, 722, 809; of Kuśa, 840; of Lakṣmaṇa, 186, 222, 265, 286, 353–54, 482, 485; of Lava, 840; of Mārica, 303; of Rāma, 11, 144, 150, 155, 170, 182, 186, 208, 209, 222, 237, 242, 245, 265, 286, 301, 307, 322, 353–54, 466, 485, 566, 717, 719, 809; of Sitā, 170–71; of Svayamprabhā, 412; of Vālmiki, 54
- battle-standard(s), 234, 256, 289, *passim*; of Akampana marked with king of beasts, 603; of Bharata marked with *kovidāra* tree, 220, 235; of Indrajit described, 664; of Kumbha marked with king of serpents, 604; of Rāvaṇa marked with human head, 685;—Nila perches on tip of, 606–7; of Prahasta, serpent, 600
- bear: Jāmbavān as, 27
- beheading: of charioteer of Indrajit, 669;—of Sumālin, 738; gods plead with Viṣṇu for, of *rākṣasas*, 118, 735; of Indrajit, 670–71; Indrajit threatens, of Lakṣmaṇa, 665; of Kumbhakarna, 31, 628; of Mahākapāla, 293; of Mahodara, 682; of Mālin, 739; of monkeys, 643, 679; of Nikumbha, 582; of Prahasta by means of shattering, 602; of *rākṣasas*, 293, 739; Rāma threatens, of Rāvaṇa, 692; of Rāvaṇa, 697, 742–43; Rāvaṇa falsely tells Sitā of, of Rāma, 565; of Śambūka by Rāma 822–23; of Triśiras, 295, 635; of Vṛtra (comparison), 628. *See also* auto-decapitation
- Bhadra (companion of Rāma): tells Rāma of rumors of Sitā, 791–92
- Bhadra (one of the elephants who support the earth), 93
- Bhaga (god of marriage), 123, 734
- Bhaga (name of an Āditya/planet), 158, 278, 736
- Bhagavadgīta*, 15, 35, 38; relationship of, to *Mahābhārata*, 15, 35; as Vaiṣṇava work, 35
- Bhagiratha: ancestors of, flooded with water, 96, austerities of, 94; Brahmā grants boon to, 95; genealogy of, 122, 252; offers funeral libations to sons of Sagara, 97
- Bhāgīrathī. *See* Ganges
- Bharadvāja (disciple): of Vālmiki, 54–55
- Bharadvāja (sage): 237; ashram of, 188–89, 221, 225–30, 255, 716; audience of, with Rāma, 52, 56, 188–90, 716–17; Bharata

- and entourage visit, 225–31, 255–56; Devavarninī, daughter of, 730; directs Rāma to Citrakūṭa, 189–90; gives daughter as wife to Viśravas, 730; as one of the seven seers, 728; as seer, 841
- Bhārata: “Tale of the Bhāratas,” 36
- Bharata (son of Daśaratha), 10, 11, 52, *passim*; accompanies Rāma on final journey, 853; advises Rāma not to perform *rāja-sūya*, 830; agrees to serve as regent, 12; anger of Lakṣmaṇa toward, 266; army of, battles *gandharvas*, 846–47; arrives at Ayodhyā, 207; as Rāma’s co-*avatāra*, 4, 22; assembles allies to aid Rāma, 787; Aśvapati as maternal uncle of, 130, 206, 845; austerities of, 11, 23, 224, 258, 283, 718, 722, 809; Ayodhyā entrusted to, 822; Bharadvāja hosts, with army, 226–29; birth of, 71; character synopsis of, 23; childhood of, 72; consecration of, 316–17; crosses Ganges, 224–25; curses himself, 211–12; decides to enter Daṇḍaka, 249; departs for Citrakūṭa, 229–31; describes Rāma’s ideal kingdom, 790; dream of, 204–5; encamps at Ganges, 220–25;—on Citrakūṭa 234–36; fondness of, for Śatrughnā, 10, 22–23, 72; finds Puṣkarāvati and Takṣaśīla, 846–87; fraternal devotion of, 23; goes to forest, 12, 219–36; grief of, 208–11, 212–14, 217–18, 221, 257, 713; hears recitation of *Rāmāyaṇa* 58, 840;—story of Ila/Ilā, 833–37; illusory deer would be source of wonder for, 311; implored to rule Ayodhyā, 248–49; informs Rāma of Daśaratha’s death, 241, 339; inner apartments of, 853; Kaikeyī, mother of, 71, *passim*; Kausalyā reviles, 211; laments Rāma and mourns Daśaratha, 213–14; learns of Daśaratha’s death, 207–8, 209;—of Rāma’s exile 208–9; leaves Ayodhyā for Nandigrāma, 257–58; Māṇḍavī wife of, 125; marriage of, 123–25; meeting of, with Rāma, 236–55; meets Rāma on Citrakūṭa, 52, 56, 236–55; orders building of road, 216–17; performs funeral rites for Daśaratha, 212–13; places Rāma’s sandals on elephant’s head, 255;—on head, 255;—in position of honor, 718;—on throne, 12, 23, 52, 56, 718, 722;—on Rāma’s feet, 722–23; and Pratardana, 787; prepares for *aśvamedha*, 838, proposes consecration of Lava and Kuśa, 851; *purohitas* of (see *purohita(s)*, of Bharata not named); Puṣkara and Takṣa sons of, 846; Rāma asks Bhadra about, 791;—consecrates, as prince regent, 726;—decides to consecrate, 851;—informs, of intention to abandon Sitā, 792–94;
- Rāma’s return to Ayodhyā reported to, 829; reaches Citrakūṭa 231; readies army to fetch Rāma, 218–19; recalled fondly by Lakṣmaṇa and Rāma, 283, receives message, 205–6; rejects kingship, 12, 215–16, 218, 851; as Rāma’s co-*avatāra*, 4, 22; returns to Ayodhyā, 256–57, 788, 847; reviles Kaikeyī, 209–11; righteousness of, 370–71; reunion of, with Rāma, 722–23; seers tell to agree to Rāma’s request, 254; Sitā’s suspicion toward, 314, 333; story of Indra and Vṛtra told to, 830–31; summoned back to Ayodhyā, 12; takes Rāma’s sandals, 52, 56, 255; threatens to fast against Rāma, 253; tells Rāma of victory over *gandharvas*, 847; urges Rāma to be consecrated, 244–45, 247–48; Vasiṣṭha urges, to undergo consecration, 218; visits Bharadvāja’s ashram, 225–31;—maternal uncle’s, 11, 130; wants to kill Lavaṇa, 809; wedding of, 125; wives of, 853; Yudhājit as maternal uncle of, 124, 845–46;—takes, to his home, 130
- Bharata (son of Dhruvasandhi), 122, 252
- Bhāratas: vedic clan associated with the *Mahābhārata*, 35–36
- Bharatas, northern quarter location of country of, 404
- Bhārgava: Arajā as daughter of, 827; Cyavana as, 807–8, 814, 841; Devayānī as daughter of, 805–6; Uśanas Kāvya as, 541, 805–6, 827–28; Vālmiki as, 840. *See also* Bhṛgu
- Bhāsakarṇa (Rāvaṇa’s field marshal): Hanumān fights and kills, 503
- Bhaṭṭikāvya (*Rāvaṇavadha*), 41
- Bhava. *See* Śiva
- Bhayā (sister of Kāla): Heti marries, 732
- Bhikṣu (*gandharva* lord), 402
- Bhogavatī (city of serpents), 237, 299, 401, 437, 439, 760
- Bhṛgu: Cyavana son of, 837; grants Sagara a boon, 90; lineage of, 786; makes Nimi’s consciousness return to his body, 804–5; Nimi chooses, to perform sacrifice, 802; Viṣṇu kills wife of, 79. *See also* Bhārgava
- Bhṛgu: curse Hanumān, 786; Cyavana delight of, 814
- Bhūti (goddess of prosperity), 315
- Bible, 3
- Big Bang theory, 37
- Big Crunch theory, 37
- bija* (heart), *Sundarakāṇḍa* as, of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 15
- binary, characters of *Rāmāyaṇa* constructed as, 20
- birth(s): attendants during, 813; of Agastya from a pot, 804; of apes, 70–71, 854; of Asamañja, 91; of birds, 280; of *daityas*,

birth(s) (*continued*)

280, 744; of Dundubhi and Māyavin, 746; expiation of misdeeds in former, 329; of gods, 280, 744; of Hanumān, 425–26, 783; of Indrajit (Meghanāda), 747; of Janaka from Nimi's body, 805; of Kaikāsi's sons, 741; of Kubera Vaiśravaṇa, 730; of Kumbhakarna, 28–29, 741; of langurs, 70–71; of Lava and Kuśa, 17, 813; of Mālin, Mālyavān, and Sumālin, 733; of Māruts, 99; of monkeys, 70–71, 854; of Nimi, 804; of Pūru from Śarmiṣṭhā, 805; of Purūravas from Ilā, 836; of *rākṣasas*, 731–32; of Rāma and brothers, 69–71, 844; of Rāvaṇa, 28–29, 741; reaping consequences of previous, 171, 188, 473, 753, 763, 802, 820; rites of, 813; of Śambūka as *śūdra*, 822; of Saramā, 747; of Sītā from a furrow, 21, 118, 261, 461, 753–54, 843; of sixty thousand sons to Sagara, 91; of sons as sign of perfect kingdom, 790; of Sukeśa, 732–33; of Śūrpaṇakhā, 28–29, 741; of Vasiṣṭha from a pot, 804; of Vasiṣṭha from semen of Mitra and Varuṇa, 803; of Vedavatī, 753; of Vibhiṣaṇa, 28–29, 741; of Vidyutkeśa, 732; of Viśravas, 730; of Yadu from Devayānī, 805; of Viṣṇu (Nārāyaṇa) to slaughter *rākṣasas*, 740. *See also* reincarnation

birthday of Vālmiki: restricted holiday, 5  
black antelope(s): wearing of hide of, 239, 286, 301, 303, 307, 382, 412, 718, 722, 752, 764

bodhisattva, Rāma as, 5n

bodily signs, of Rāma, 484–85; of Sītā of, 587–88

body, preservation of, in vat of oil, 202, 822

books (*kāṇḍas*), of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 9

boon(s), 32, 107, 133, *passim*; Bharadvāja grants, to Rāma, 717; Bhṛḡu grants, to Sagara, 90; Brahmā grants, to Bhagīratha, 95;—, to Hanumān, 426, 508, 786;—to Indrajit, 583, 773–74;—to Dvidiva and Mainda, 525;—to Kabandha, 344;—to Kubera Vaiśravaṇa, 731;—to Kumbhakarna, 743–44;—to Mālin, Mālyavān, and Sumālin, 733, 735–36;—to Maya, 412;—to Rāvaṇa, 10, 24, 68–69, 74, 327, 742–43, 760;—to Śarabhaṅga, 268;—to Vibhiṣaṇa, 743;—to Virāḍha, 266; Cyavana grants, to son of Kālindī, 252; Daśaratha grants, to Kaikeyī, 11, 23, 141, 144; Dharma grants, to crow, 755; gods grant, to animals, 754–55;—to Hanumān, 785–86;—to Nimi, 805;—to Rāma, 53, 721, 823;—to Śatruḡhna, 817;

granted to Dundubhi, 362;—the Nivātaka-vacas, 760; Hema grants, to Svyaṃprabhū, 412; Indra grants, to Hanumān, 426, 785–86;—to peacock, 754–55;—to Rāma, 712–13, 722; of Kaikeyī, 316, 417; Kubera grants, to Hanumān, 786;—to lizard, 755; Niśākara grants, to Sampātī, 421; Rāma grants, to ascetics, 269; of Rāvaṇa, 742–43, 745, 768, 772; Śiva grants, to Hanumān, 786;—to Indrajit, 764;—to Madhu, 808–9, 811;—to Sukeśa, 733;—to Viśvāmitra, 107; Sūrya grants, to Hanumān, 786;—to Mount Sumeru, 783; Umā grants half of, to Ila, 834;—to *rākṣasa* women, 733; Varuṇa grants, to *haṃsa*, 755;—to Hanumān, 786; Vasiṣṭha grants, to Mitrasaha, 813 (*see also* Mitrasaha Saudāsa); Viśvakarman grants, to Hanumān, 786;—to Nala, 554; Yama grants, to Hanumān, 786

bow(s), 223, 229, 234, *passim*; Agastya gives, to Rāma, 278; of Indrajit, 507, 764; of Janaka, 83, 117–19; of Mālin, 738; of Śiva, 11, 117–19, 127; of Viṣṇu, 126–28, 278, 295–96. *See also* horn bow; kshatriya(s): bow of, compared to kindling

Brahmā (Prajāpati), 68, 72, 76, *passim*;

ashrams of Daṇḍaka resemble abode of, 264; asks Indra to recall his evil deed, 774; asks Rāma to return to essential Vaiṣṇava form, 854;—to return to heaven, 849, 854; as boar, 251; boons of unfalsifiable, 760; calls Rāma “Viṣṇu,” 849; calms fears of divinities, 816–17;—of Rāma, 844; creates Ahalyā, 774;—all people as identical, 774;—earth with sons, 251;—Lake Mānasa, 77;—*rākṣasas* and *yakṣas*, 732;—rod of Kāla, 760;—the waters, 732; “Creator” as part of Trimūrti, 34–35; denies immortality to Indrajit, 773;—to Rāvaṇa, 743; weapons and weapon-spell of, 482, 493, 507–8, 523, 639, 641–42, 654, 655, 661; explains Śveta's hunger, 825–26; father of Kuśa (2), 84;—of Pulastya, 729, 780; foretells deeds of Hanumān, 786; as four-faced god, 55, 733, 785–86; gives Ahalyā to Gautama, 774;—his arrow and quivers to Indra, 278;—Maya's wealth to Hemā, 412;—Puṣpaka to Kubera, 731;—Rāvaṇi epithet “Indrajit,” 773; gods approach, for refuge, 68, 784–85; gods and, propitiate Vāyu, 785; as granter of boons, 107, 133, 148, 171, 268, 270, 279, 733, 776, 786, 834; grants boon(s) to Bhagīratha, 95;—to Dvidiva and Mainda, 525;—to gods, 678–79;—to Hanumān, 426, 508, 786;—to Hemā, 412;—to Indrajit, 583, 773–74;—to

Kubera, 731;—to Kumbhakarṇa, 743–44;—to Mālin, Mālyavān, and Sumālin, 733, 735–36;—to Maya, 412;—to Rāvaṇa, 10, 24, 68–69, 74, 327, 742–43, 760;—to Suketu, 78;—to Vibhiṣaṇa, 743;—to Virādha, 266; grants brahmanhood to Viśvāmītra, 116–17;—daughter to Suketu, 78;—heavens to Rāma’s followers, 854–55;—long life to Kabandha, 344;—poetic inspiration to Vālmiki, 9, 55; instructs Vālmiki to compose *Rāmāyaṇa*, 55; Kāla as messenger of, 848–49; makes Kubera world guardian, 731; ordains Vasiṣṭha’s birth from semen of Mitra and Varuṇa, 803; orders gods to incarnate, 70–71; pronounces Viśvāmītra a brahman-seer, 116–17;—great seer, 115;—royal seer, 109;—seer, 114–15; proposes alliance between Rāvaṇa and Nivātakavacas, 760–61; protects Rāvaṇa from Yama’s rod, 760; provokes quarrel between Śiva and Viṣṇu, 127; Rāma submits to weapon-spells of, 642; reminds Rāma of his incarnation as Viṣṇu, 844;—of true nature, 849; restores Rāvaṇa’s heads, 743; revives Hanumān, 785; sires lineage of Ikṣvāku, 121, 251; stops Rāvaṇa’s auto-decapitation, 299, 742–4; tells gods to give boons to Hanumān, 785;—Rāma to listen to *Rāmāyaṇa*, 844;—Rāvaṇa to release Indra, 773;—Sarasvatī to become Kumbhakarṇa’s speech, 31, 743–44;—Śveta he must eat his own corpse, 825–26;—Vālmiki to compose *Rāmāyaṇa*, 9, 55;—Vasiṣṭha to enter semen of Mitra and Varuṇa, 803;—Yama not to strike Rāvaṇa with rod, 760; tricks Kumbhakarṇa under pretext of boon, 743–44; Vasiṣṭha as son of, 802–3; Vasiṣṭha requests a new body from, 803; Vāyu worships, 785; visits Vālmiki, 9, 55; witnesses abduction of Sītā, 324; world of (*see* Brahmāloka). *See also* Prajāpatis

Brahmadatta: husband of Kuśanābha’s daughters, 86; son of Somadā, 85–86

Brahmahatyā (personification): demands residence outside of Indra, 832–33; dwells in four places, 833

*brahmahatyā* (slaying of a brahman), 77, 154, 276, 370, 391; Indra suffers sin of, 832; sin of, purified by *aśvamedha*, 830

Brahmaloka (world of Brahmā), 99, 104, 247, 406, 622, 733; Ila attains, 837; Manu attains, 826; next to Santāna, 854; Rāma will go to, 54, 799; Śarabhaṅga ascends to, 268; Śveta attains, 825; Viśvāmītra attains, 109

brahman(s), 57, 59, 61, *passim*; Agastya as foremost of, 775; born from the mouth of Manu, 280; Brahmahatyā possesses killers of, 833; cautionary tales about, 800–7; child of, restored to life, 18, 823; churn corpse of Nimi, 805; cows and, 78–79, 290, 709; curse Hanumān, 783, 786–87;—Nrga, 801; death of son of, 18, 820–21; eating of five-clawed animals by, 370; feeding of, during *aśvamedha*, 66–67, 838; Ilvala as, 275; Ilvala and Vātāpi kill, 275–76; in list of social classes, 40, 65, 219, 240, 280, 821, 842; live on Yamunā’s banks, 807–8; meat offered to, 812; Nalākūbara as, 767; Nimi’s body preserved by, 804; Nrga gives cows to, 800;—ignores, 801; power of, greater than kshatriyas, 106, 108–9; propitiate Śiva, 837; *rākṣasas* slaughter, 269; Rāma gives wealth to, 11, 165–66; Rāvaṇa as, 314–17; role of, in the *yugas*, 821; Śabalā (cow) of, 800–801; Samaga as type of, 383; and story of Nrga, 800–802; summoned to *aśvamedha*, 838. *See also* ascetic(s)

brahman-killing. *See brahmahatyā*

brahman *rākṣasas*, 64, 463

braid. *See* Sītā: braid of

breaking of jaw (*hanu*). *See* Hanumān: jaw of, broken

Bṛhaspati, 137, 158, 159, 244, 484, 550, 780, 845; Kuśadhvaja son of, 752; as lord of speech, 481, 483; as *purohita* of gods, 339; as *purohita* of Indra, 723; restores gods to life, 591–92; Saṃvarta son of, 754; wisdom of, 131, 388, 415, 752–53

bribery, 438, 616, 636, 660, 744; and conciliation, as means of cooperation, 394

bride price: of Sītā, 118, 120, 123

bridge to Laṅkā, 538–39, 572, 590; monkeys and Nala construct, 15, 27, 53, 56, 554–55, 716–18, 721; monkeys cross, 555, 721; Rāma constructs, 703; Rāvaṇa asks about, 556

Buddha: as *avatāra* (incarnation) of Viṣṇu, 21; as offshoot of Ikṣvākus, 36

Buddhism, 5n, 34, 36–7, 39

Buddhist canon, 35

Budha: and story of Ila/Ilā, 834–37

buffalo *asura*. *See* Dundubhi

burrow(s). *See* cave; Nrga: burrows of

Cakravān, Mount: Viṣṇu kills Pañcajanya on, 403

Cakravartin (Universal Emperor), 35

*caṇḍāla* (outcaste): Triśaṅku becomes, 41, 110

Candra (moon god), 36, 640, 735; enemy of Rāhu, 256

- Candra (mountain in ocean of milk), 592  
Candrakāntā (city): founded in Malla by Rāma, 847  
Candraketu (son of Lakṣmaṇa): consecration of, in Candrakāntā of, 847  
Candravaṃśa (Lunar Dynasty). *See* Lunar Dynasty  
cannibalism (eating of human flesh), 812–13; of Kumbhakarṇa, 743; of Lavaṇa, 814; of Rāvaṇa, 29, 754; of ministers of Rāvaṇa, 778. *See also* eating: of own corpse; flesh; flesh-eating  
captivity: of Indra, 772–74; of Rāvaṇa, 779–80. *See also* Sītā: captivity of  
carriage(s): 175, 213 219, *passim*; Daśartaha orders Sumantra to convey Rāma, 171; Lakṣmaṇa takes Sītā to forest in, 794; people of Ayodhyā follow Rāma's, 177; Rāma orders Lakṣmaṇa to take Sītā to forest in, 794–96; Rāma, Sītā, and Lakṣmaṇa go to forest in, 173–74, 178–80; —abandon carriage, 184. *See also* chariot(s)  
cautionary tales, 17, 18, 24, 41, 800–807  
cave (cavern), 147, 210, 237, *passim*; as dwelling of Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 380–81; Hanumān born in, 426; Kabandha directs Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa to, 347; Kiṣkindhā as, 53, 378–79, 381, 385, 390; of Kumbhakarṇa, 610; of Maya, 412, 414, 418; —southern search party in, 411–14, 418; of Nṛga (*see* Nṛga: burrows of), of Rkṣa, 56; of Sāmpātī, 416, 422; Sītā takes recourse in, 291; Svayamprabhā rescues southern search party from, 413; Vālin battles Mayāvin in, 360–61, 408  
cavern. *See* cave  
chapter (*adhya*ya): of *Mahābhārata*, 9n  
chapter(s) (*sarga*[s]): of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 9,10, 45  
character synopsis: of animals, 24–25; of Bharata, 23; of Daśaratha, 23; of Hanumān, 26–27; of Indrajit, 31–32; of Kaikeyī, 24; of Kausalyā, 23–24; of Kumbhakarṇa, 31; of Lakṣmaṇa, 22; of lesser monkeys, 27; of major characters, 20; of minor *rākṣasas*, 32; of Rāma, 20–21; of *rākṣasas*, 27–28; of *rākṣasa* women, 32–34; of Rāvaṇa, 28–30; of Śatrughna, 23; Sītā, 21–22; of Sugriva, 25; of Vālin, 25–26; of Vibhiṣaṇa, 30–31  
chariot(s): of Atikāya, 636–38; battle of Rāvaṇa with Rāma, 689–98, 695–98; chariot of, fashioned through power of illusion, 320; of Brahmā, 733; of Dhūmrākṣa yoked with donkeys, 594; flying, 854–55; of Indra, 267–68, 770, 772; of Indrajit Rāvaṇi, 507, 655, 764, 772; —destroyed by Aṅgada, 581; 772; of Khara, 289; of Rāvaṇa, 302, 320, 693–94, 748, 765, 771–72; Śiva gives, to Indrajit, 764; of sons and grandsons of Varuṇa, 761; steered by owners' will, 761, 764; of Sumālin, 769; Sūrya as, of Rāhu, 784; of Yama, 758–60. *See also* flying chariot(s); Puṣpa/Puṣpaka(vimāna)  
child(ren): abandonment of, 477, 732; of brahman restored to life, 823; death of, 18, 820–21; killing of, 18; —by Asamañja, 170; killing of unborn (*see* feticide); never predeceases parent, 18; unable to conceive, 88  
childbirth. *See* birth(s)  
childhood, of Hanumān, 16, 426, 561, 783–87; of sons of Daśaratha, 10  
children, killing of, by Asamañja, 170  
Christian colonist, 42  
Christianity, 37, 39  
churning of the ocean. *See* ocean: churning of  
Cinas: northern quarter location of country of, 404  
*cirajivin* (long-lived one): Hanumān as, 27, 853; Vibhiṣaṇa as, 31, 743, 853  
Citrukūṭa, 52, 56, 226, 269, 270, 348, 492, 532, 714, 716, 719; Bharadvāja directs Rāma to, 189–90; Bharata and army encamp on, 234–36; Bharata departs for, 229–31; —meets with Rāma on, 236–55; —reaches, 231; crow incident takes place on, 533; description of, 232–33; Rāma establishes ashram on, 190–91  
Citraratha, advisor and charioteer of Rāma, 166  
co-*avatāras*, 22. *See also* *avatāra* (incarnation)  
Cola, 400  
comic figure: monkeys as, 24  
commander: as wife of army, 425  
composite bow. *See* horn bow  
conch (*śaṅkha*), of Viṣṇu, 403, 735, 737, 738 739, 740  
conciliation, 339, 369, 375, 394, 415, 438, 497, 616, 636, 660, 744; and bribery, as means of cooperation 394  
conciliation, of Sugriva by Lakṣmaṇa, 393  
confrontation: of Rāma with Rāma Jāmadagnya, 11, 56, 126–28  
consecration. *See* ritual consecration; royal consecration  
construction of bridge. *See* bridge to Laṅkā  
corpse(s), 269, 286, 341, *passim*; brahmans churn, of Nimi, 805; condemned to eat own, 278, 824–25; headless, as evil omen, 290, 594; of Jaṭāyus, 341; preservation of, of Nimi, 804; in vat of oil, 202, 822; Rāma kicks, of Dundubhi, 53; Śveta condemned

to eat his own, 824–25. *See also* cannibalism; flesh-eating; preservation: of bodies of Nimi

cosmic cycles (*kalpas*), 4, 37. *See also yuga(s)*

cosmic destruction: Rāma threatens, 337–38.

*See also* universal destruction

cosmic eras (*yugas*), 37–38; Dvāpara, 821; Kali, 821; Kṛta, 729, 753–54, 808, 821, 826, 843; Tretā, 753–54, 821, 824

cow(s): Ambariṣa offers, in exchange for Śunaḥśepha, 113 ; Bharata gives, to brahmans, 213;—promises to give, to Hanumān, 719; and brahmans, 78–79, 290, 709; Daśaratha gives, to priests, 68, 356; exalted state of those who give a Sītāthousand, 200; as gift to brahmans, 68, 800; *gomedha*, sacrifice of, 764; Janaka gives, to daughters, 125; Kausalyā gives, to Rāma's friends, 150; Nṛga gives, to brahmans, 800; Rāma has Lakṣmaṇa give, to Suyajñā, 166;—gives, to the learned, 54;—to brahmans, 124, 726;—to Trijaṭa Gārgya (*see* Trijaṭa Gārgya), 166; Rohiṇī bears, 280; Śabalā as, of brahman (Nṛga story), 800–801;—of Vasiṣṭha 105–7; Sītā vows to give, to brahmans, 186–87; Surabhi as, pours forth milk for ocean of milk, 761; Viśvāmitra offers, in exchange for Śabalā, 105–6; wish-fulfilling, of Vasiṣṭha, 105–7. *See also* Śabalā; Surabhi (Surabhī)

creation, 37

cremation: of Jaṭāyus, 53, 342; of Kabandha, 345; of Rāvaṇa, 702; of Vālin, 378–79.

*See* funerary rites

crow(s), 318, 723; Dharma (Yama) grants boon to, 755; foretells abduction of Sītā, 352; Yama (god of death) becomes, 754; second path in sky that of, 419

crow episode, Hanumān recounts, 532–34; Sītā recounts, 492–93, 496

*cūḍāmaṇi*. *See* hair ornament

Cūlin: grants son to Somadā, 85–86

curse(s): of abducted women on Rāvaṇa, 16, 29–30, 762–63; of Agastya on Mārīca, 78;—on Tātaka, 32–33, 78; of Anarāyaṇa on Rāvaṇa, 16, 756; of Bharata on those approving of Rāma's exile, 211–12; of blind sage on Daśaratha, 200–201; of Brahmā on Kumbhakarna, 614; of brahmans on Nṛga 801–2; on celestial beings to become *rākṣasas*, 32; Durvāsas threatens, on Lakṣmaṇa, 40, 849–50; exhaust powers of asceticism, 753; freedom from, through bathing in Ganges, 96; of Gautama on his Ahalyā and Indra, 101, 774; of Mataṅga on Vālin, 408; of Mitra on Urvaśī, 804; as motif of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 16, 32–33, 40; of

Nalakūbara on Rāvaṇa, 16, 767–68; of Nandin/Nandiśvara on Rāvaṇa, 16, 24, 751–52; of Nimi on Vasiṣṭha, 803; of Pulastya, 729; of sages on Hanumān, 783, 786–87; of Sthūlasīras on Kabandha, 344; Śūrpaṇakhā as victim of, 33; Trṇa-bindu recognizes Pulastya's, 730; of Umā on gods and earth, 88–89; of Uśanas Kāvya on Arajā, 828;—on Daṇḍa, 828;—on Yayāti, 806–7; of Vaiśravaṇa on Tumburu, 266–67; of Vālmiki on Niṣāda hunter, 9, 54; of Vasiṣṭha on Mitrasaha Saudāsa, 813;—on Nimi, 803; of Vasiṣṭha's sons on Triśaṅku, 110; Viśravas exempts Vibhiṣaṇa from, 29, 741–42; of Viśravas on his children, 28–29, 741;—on Kaikasī, 28–29, 741;—on Rāvaṇa, 16, 29, 750; of Viśvāmitra on his sons, 114;—on Mahodaya, 111; of—on Rambhā, 116;—on Vasiṣṭha's sons, 111

Cyavana: as Bhārgava, 807–8, 814, 841; ashram of, 814; asks Rāma for protection from Lavaṇa, 808–9; grants Kāliṇḍī boon of son, 252; leads delegation of brahmans, 807; as son of Bhrgu, 837; tells story of Lavaṇa and Māndhātṛ, 814–15;—of Madhu, 808

cyclical time, 37. *See also* cosmic cycles; cosmic eras

Dadhimukha (monkey), 564, 642; Aṅgada attacks, 528; conciliates Aṅgada, 530; monkeys assault, 526–28; reports devastation of Madhavana to Sugriva, 528–29

*daitya(s)*, 90, 96, 398, *passim*; Diti gives birth to, 280, 744; Indra as slayer of, 831; inhabit Rasātala, 760; Kaiṭabha and Madhu as, 817; Kālakeyas a clan of, 763; Maya as lord of, 746; monkeys similar to, 560; Nivātakavacas as class of, 760; Rāma kills, 322; Rāvaṇa abducts daughters of, 762–63;—invulnerable against, 612, 743;—kills, 761, 763;—takes delight in harming, 574; Śambhu as king of, 753; Śarmiṣṭhā as, 805; Viṣṇu kills, 490; worship Viṣṇu, 854

*dānava(s)*, 69, 74, 92, *passim*; Atikāya defeats, 636–37; battle between gods and, 591–92, 652, 670, 761, 768; Brahmā grants Rāvaṇa boon of invulnerability to, 742–43; Dundubhi as, 408; fear Rāvaṇa, 509; Hayagrīva as, 403; Kabandha as, 344;—foremost among, 343; live in ocean, 437; live in Pātāla, 423, 554, 577, 697; Maya as, 405, 412, 545; monkeys similar to, 560, 398;—Naraka as, 403; pose no threat to Rāvaṇa, 612; Rāma kills,

*dānava(s)* (*continued*)

322, 551; Rāvaṇa abducts daughters of, 762–63;—as enemy of, 609, 629, 649;—invulnerable against, 69, 422, 605, 677, 700, 743;—takes delight in harming, 574; Timidhvaja's son as king of, 177; Vālin slayer of, 373; Vidyujjihva as, 29, 33, 746; wander three worlds, 677–78; will not accept *apsarases*, 98; worship Viṣṇu, 854

*daṇḍa* (punishment). *See* punishment

*Daṇḍa* (*rākṣasa*): son of Sumālin, 734

*Daṇḍa* (son of Ikṣvāku): Agastya tells story of, 826–28; cursed by Uśanas Kāvya, 828; as a dullard, 827; etymology of name of, 827; kingdom of, becomes *Daṇḍaka* forest, 828; *purohita* of (*see purohita(s)*):—of *Daṇḍa*); rapes Arajā, 827–28; youngest son of Ikṣvāku, 827

*Daṇḍa* (weapon): celestial discus, 80; divine weapon, 108

*Daṇḍaka* forest, 12, 32–33, 793, 798, *passim*; ashrams of, 264, 271, 274; Bharata decides to enter, 219; description of, 162; Janasthāna in, 828; Kaikeyī asks that Rāma be exiled to, 144, 150; Khara and Dūṣaṇa protect, 763–64; kingdom of *Daṇḍa* becomes, 828; Mārīca feeds on flesh of seers in, 305; *rākṣasas* inhabit, 273; Rāma enters, 12, 52, 56, 264, 304, 413, 434;—exiled to, 144, 150, 152, 168–69; makes safe for sages, 300;—vows to protect seers of, 271, 273;—wants to enter, 249; Rāma's exile to, recalled, 208–9, 245, 434, 510, 519–20; Rāvaṇa abducts Sitā in (*see* abduction: of Sitā by Rāvaṇa); Rāvaṇa sends Śūrpaṇakhā to, 33, 763–64; sages of, 271, 273, 296; Śūrpaṇakhā lives in, 287, 764; Virādha lives in, 265–66; Viśvāmītra's ashram in, 305

*Danu*: cursed by Sthūlaśīras (father of Kabandha), 344; as son of Śrī, 355. *See also* Kabandha

*Danū* (wife of Kaśyapa), 280

*Dardara* (mountain): Hanumān swears by, 489; Vinata, troop leader of monkeys, from, 558

*Dardura* (mountain), 227

*Darimukha*, 541, 565; arrival of, in Kiṣkin-dhā, 397

*Daśagrīva*, “Ten-necked.” *See* Rāvaṇa

*Daśaratha*, 12, 53, 61, *passim*; accedes to demands of Kaikeyī, 11, 143–45; actions of, raise ethical questions, 12, 23, 143, 187; alliance of, with Romapāda, 63–64; as role model, 12; attains heaven, 224, 230, 245, 254; becomes blind, 201; blind ascetic curses, 200–201; boons of, to

Kaikeyī, 141, 143–44, 150, 160, 248, 316; breaks prenuptial promise, 23, 248; cancels Rāma's consecration, 149–51; character synopsis of, 23; curses Kaikeyī, 170; death of, 11, 201–2;—Rāma learns of, 241; debt of, 135, 233 249, 254; decides to consecrate Rāma, 11, 23, 52, 131–33; descriptions of, 23, 59, 480; designates Rāma as prince regent, 133–35; embalment of, 202; ensnared by Kaikeyī's wives and her two boons, 143–44; exiles Rāma, 11, 22, 149–51; faints from grief, 168; final audience of, with Rāma, 167–72; as foil for Rāma, 23; friendship of, with Jaṭāyus, 13, 279, 281, 417;—with Sampāti, 423;—with Vālmīki, 796; funeral libations of wives of, 213; funeral rites of, 212–13, 242; genealogy of, 121–22; gives earth to brahmans, 68; grief of, for Rāma, 52, 144–46, 149, 151, 168, 174, 184, 192, 201, 203, 209, 719; grief of wives of, 192;—over death of, 243–44; hears prophecy of 799; hears tale of R̥ṣyaśr̥ṅga, 61;—of son of Sagara, 170; heavenly form of, appears, 711–12; inner apartments of, 149, 151, 168; journeys to Mithilā, 119–20; Kaikeyī as cause of death of, 187;—saves twice, 141;—speaks for, 150–51; Kausalyā reviles, 195–96; kills ascetic boy, 198–99; Lakṣmaṇa wants to imprison; 659;—to seize control of government from, 157, 163; Mantharā reviles, 139; marriage of sons of, 11, 125; ministers of, 60, 63, 64, 203–4, 724; model of righteous kingship, 12, 23; orders consecration of Rāma, 134; people curse, 171, 181;—praise, 138; performs birth and naming rites for sons, 71–72; permits Bharata to depart for Rājagṛha, 130; pleads with Bhārgava Rāma, 126; promise to, cannot be rendered false, 253; *purohita(s)* of (*see purohita(s)*): of Daśaratha not named); questions Durvāsas, 799;—Sumantra, 192–93; Rāma criticizes, 187 favorite son of, 130, 510;—questions Bharata about, 238; receives and distributes celestial porridge, 69–70; relationship of Kausalyā with, 23; remembers evil deed, 197; repudiates Bharata and Kaikeyī, 145; returns to Ayodhyā, 125–28; reunited with wives in heaven, 845; reviles Kaikeyī, 144–45, 175; R̥ṣyaśr̥ṅga as sacrificial priest of, 10, 63–68; rules kingdom, 10, 59–60; sacrifice (*aśva-medha*) of, 61, 64–71, 238, 356; sacrifice (*rājāsūya*) of, 238, 356; sacrifice (son-producing [*putrakāmeṣṭi*]) of, 10, 68–70; sacrificial priests of, 60; sends Rāma with

- Viśvāmītra, 73–75, 305; shoots by sound, 197–98; Sītā daughter-in-law of, 797; sons of, born, 71; subordination of royal duty to sexual infatuation by, 12, 23, 143, 187; suffers for lack of a son, 61, 64; Sumantra delivers Rāma's message to, 192–94; unable to speak because of grief, 149–51; under power of Kaikeyī, 143; Vasiṣṭha as sacrificial priest of, 64–68;—as *purohita* of, 64, 75, 136, 203, 214, 225; visits R̥ṣyaśr̥ṅga, 63; Viṣṇu chooses, as his father, 10, 69; Viśvāmītra requests aid of, 10, 72–75, 305; wants Rāma to be accompanied by army, 169; wives of, adorn Sītā, 724; women of inner apartments of, 60, 70, 173–74, 192–93, 246
- daśavatāra* (ten incarnations) of Viṣṇu, 21
- dāsyabhāva* (devotional service to chosen deity) in Vaiṣṇava theology, 26
- date of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 3, 8, 34
- daughter(s): Analā, of Sundarī and Mālyavān, 734; Analā, of Vibhīṣaṇa, 489; as alms, 730; Balā and Atibalā as, of Brahmā, 76; death as punishment for man who lusts after, 371; Devavar̥ṇinī, of Bharadvāja, 730; Devavatī, of Sukeśa, 733; Devayānī, of Uśanas Kāvya, 805; Ganges, of Himalaya and Menā, 87; Jayā and Suprabhā, of Prajāpati Dakṣa, 75; Kaikasī, of Sūmālin, 28, 740–41; Kaikeyī, of Aśvapati, 141, Keśinī, of king of Vidarbha, 90; Kumbhinasī (the elder), of Sumālin, 734; Kumbhinasī (the younger), of Viśvāvasu and Analā, 808; Māṇḍavi and Śrutakirtī, of Kuśadhvaja, 123, 125, 128; Mandodarī, of Maya and Hemā, 746; Mantharā, of Virocana, 79; Menā, of Meru, 87; *jānakī*, *janakātmaja* translated as, of Janaka, 46; of Kuśanābha, story of, 84–86; Pārvatī (Umā), of Himalaya and Menā, 87; of Prājāpati Dakṣa, 280–81, of Tṛṇabindu, 729–30; Śaci, of Puloman, 490; Sālakaṭaṅkaṭā, of Sandhyā, 732; Śāntā, of Romapāda, 61, 63; Saramā, of Śailūṣa, 747; Śarmīṣṭha, of Vṣarpaṇvan, 805; Sītā, of goddess of earth, 11, 19; Sītā, of Janaka (see Sītā); Somadā, of Ūrmilā (*gandharva* woman), 85–86; Sumatī, of Ariṣṭanemi, 90; Śūrpaṅkhā, of Kaikasi and Viśravas, 29, 741; Tāra, of Suṣeṇa, 376; Tātākā, of Suketu, 78; unmarried, as source of trouble, suspicion, 741, 746; Ūrmilā, of Janaka, 123; Vārunī, of Varuṇa, 98; Vedavatī, of Kuśadhvaja, 752–53; Vedavatī reborn as, of virtuous man, 21
- death: as punishment, 371, 414, 513, 562, 850; by execution, 247; by fasting (see fast to death); not a punishment for emissaries, 512; untimely, as sign of wrongful conduct of king, 820
- debt: to ancestors, 127, 248; of Daśaratha, 135, 233 249, 254; to gods and seers, 248
- deer. See Mārica: becomes a golden deer
- description(s): of *aśoka* grove of Rāvaṇa, 456–58;—of Rāma, 725, 790–91; of auspicious marks of Rāma, 484–85;—of Sītā, 588–89; of autumn, 386; of battleground, 582; of Citrakūṭa, 232–33; of directions, 398–406; of eastern quarter, 398–400; of end of rainy season, 386; of feats of Rāvaṇa, 299; of forces of Rāma, 563–64; declares impossibility of spying on Rāma's forces, 563; of friendship, 358, 359; ideal kingdom of Rāma, 790; of Hanumān, 26–27, 379, 406, 425, 431; of Kailāsa, 405; of Kiṣkindhā, 390–91; of Kumbhakarṇa's sleeping chamber, 610, 747; of Laṅkā, 319, 437–50, 575–76, 734; of Laṅkā and defenses, 539; of rainy season, 382–83; of Mandākinī River (Ganges), 233–34; of northern quarter, 404–6; of ocean, 543; of palace of Rāvaṇa, 443–46; of Pampā 346–47, 349–52; of Pañcaviṭī, 281–82; of Puṣpaka, 445–46, 714; of rainy season, 382–83; of *rākṣasa* wardresses, 462, 469; of *rākṣasas*, 440–42; of Rāma (see Rāma: description of); of Rāvaṇa (see Rāvaṇa: descriptions of); of Sītā (see Sītā: description of); of social classes in *yugas*, 821–22; of southern quarter, 400–402; of Sugrīva's abode, 391; of Vālin (see Vālin: description of); of wives and courtisans of Rāvaṇa, 446–52; of western quarter, 402–4
- destiny: as all powerful, 850; forces Rāma's exile, 155; previous actions determine, 850. See also fate
- destruction. See cosmic destruction
- Devāntaka: fights Aṅgada, 633–34; Hanumān fights and kill, 634; Kumbhakarṇa paternal uncle of, 628; leads *rākṣasas* into battle, 629–30; looks like Viṣṇu, 630; Vālin fights, 634
- Devarāta, in lineage of Janaka, 122; Śiva gives bow to, 118, 127
- Devavar̥ṇinī: daughter of Bharadvāja, 730; mother of Kubera Vaiśravaṇa, 730; wife of Viśravas, 730
- Devavatī: daughter of Grāmaṇī, 733; mother of Mālin, Mālyavān, and Sumālin, 733; wife of Sukeśa, 733
- Devayānī: daughter of Uśanas Kāvya, 805; mother of Yadu, 805; threatens suicide by poison, 806; wife of Yayāti, 805

- Dhānyamālini: Atikāya son of, 636; diverts Rāvaṇa from Sitā, 470
- Dharaṇī (earth goddess): takes Sitā back, 843. *See also* Mādhavi; Vasudhā
- Dharma (god of righteousness), 52, 75, 755; as father of Suśeṇa, 563, 581; grants boon to crow, 755; Rāma as a second, 719; taken for weakness, 553; weapons of, 80, 108
- dharma* (righteousness), 4–5, 18, 20, 27, 40; discourse on (*see* discourse(s): on righteousness); in *Rāmāyaṇa*, 20; in *yuga* theory, 37; translation of word, 46. *See also* *rājadharmā*; righteousness
- Dharmabhṛt: tells story of Pañcāpsaras, 274
- Dharmarāja (god of death), 200. *See also* Kāla; Kṛtānta; Mr̥tyu; Vaivasvata; Yama
- Dharmāranya: Ādhūrtaṛajasa founds, 84
- dharmaśāstra*: *Rāmāyaṇa* as, 5
- Dhātṛ (the creator), 158, 278; Diti bears, 230
- Dhṛṣṭi (minister of Daśaratha), 60
- Dhūmaketu (minister of Rāvaṇa), 769
- Dhūmaketu (planet), 464
- Dhūmra (leader of apes): arrival of, in Kiṣkindhā, 397, 559, 622
- Dhūmra (mountain), 394
- Dhūmrākṣa: battles monkeys, 594–96; Hanumān fights and kills, 596; Māñibhadra/Māñicara strikes down in battle, 750; one of Rāvaṇa's six ministers, 749, 776–77, 778; son of Sumālin and Ketumatī, 734
- digging of ocean. *See* ocean
- Dilīpa, 122, 200, 218, 252; father of Bhagiratha, 94; son of Aṃśumant, 94; unable to bring Ganges to earth, 94, 96
- disciple(s): Bharadvāja as, of Vālmiki, 54–55; Kuśa and Lava as, of Vālmiki, 6, 10, 17–18, 57, 839–41 (*see also* Kuśa; Lava); of Bharadvāja, 225–26; of sages, 728; of Śiva, 77; of Uśanas Kāvya, 828; of Vasiṣṭha, 104, 107; of Viśvāmitra, 111;—are images of Rāma, 840;—Rāma recognizes as sons, 842
- discourse(s): on righteousness (*dharma*), 238, 272, 369–70, 571–72, 658–60, 850; on fate of Rāma, 378; on righteousness of Rāma to Vālin, 370–72; on statecraft (*nītiśāstra*), 104, 203, 239–241, 488, 510–12, 547–546, 571–72, 677; of Kumbhakarna to Rāvaṇa, 31, 615–16, 619;—of Rāma to Vālin, 370–72; of Vālin to Rāma, 369–70
- discus (*cakra*): of Dharma, 108; of Kāla, 108; of Viṣṇu, 80, 108, 290, 299, 403, 449, 644, 645, 709, 735, 736, 737, 739, 740, 768
- Diti: austerities of 98–99; gives birth to *daityas*, 280, 744;—to Māruts, 99; Indra serves, 98;—smashes fetus of, 99; sons of, 97–98; wife of Kaśyapa, 98, 280, 744
- divine weapon-spell(s). *See* *weapon-spells*
- divinity/divinities: Hanumān as, 27; of Hinduism, 4. *See also* god; gods
- dove: exemplary story of, 551–52
- dream(s): as prophecy, 475; beliefs about, 205, 311, 347, 481, 483; of Bharata, 204–5; of Daśaratha, 135; of Lakṣmaṇa, 670; of Mārica, 307; about monkeys inauspicious, 481, 483; of the *rākṣasas*, 571; of Sitā, 483; of Trijaṭā, 33–34, 56, 475–76
- drinking ground/hall of Rāvaṇa 56, 450–53
- drinking wine or liquor, 169, 196, 228–229, 257, 318, 363, 379, 387, 394, 428, 430, 444, 447, 449, 451, 462, 472, 476, 527–29, 542, 611, 613, 617, 646, 788; atonements for, 391
- Droṇa (mountain in ocean of milk), 592
- Dundubhi: as *asura*, 363; boon of, 362; as buffalo demon, 362; challenges ocean to fight, 362;—Himalaya to fight, 362;—Vālin to fight, 362–63; as *dānava*, 408; description of, 362; fights Vālin, 363; Māyāvin as son of, 360–61; Rāma kicks skeleton of, 53, 363; son of Maya, 746; Vālin kills, 363, 408
- Durdhara (field marshal of Rāvaṇa): Hanumān, fights and kills, 503
- Durvāsas, 837, 841; ashram of, 850; curse of, 40; Daśaratha questions, 799; demands freshly cooked meal, 850; fasting of, 850; foretells future to Daśaratha, 799; Lakṣmaṇa announces arrival of, 850; son of Atri, 798; threatens curse, 849–50; in Vasiṣṭha's ashram, 788–89; visits Rāma, 849–50
- Dūṣaṇa (general of Khara's army), 32, brother of Khara, 284, Khara addresses, 289; made chief of Khara's army, 763; protects Daṇḍaka forest, 763–64; rallies *rākṣasas*, 293; Rāma fights and kills, 52, 293; Rāma fights and kills recalled, 300–301, 303, 327, 461, 480, 564, 585, 652, 677, 697, 716; Rāvaṇa sends, to Daṇḍaka forest with Khara, 763–64; Śūpaṇakhā tells Rāma about, 284
- dust storm as curse, 828
- Dutt, Madhusudana, 32
- duty: dereliction of, by Sugriva, 387–88; of king with advisors, 307–9;—to ascetics, 264–65;—in behavior toward others' wives, 321;—in hunting, 311;—Jaṭāyus on, 321;—as protector of people, 264–65, 269;—for Rāma, 264–65;—Śūrpaṇakhā on, 299–300
- Dvāpara Yuga, 38, 821
- Dvidida, 380, 390, 440, *passim*; arrives in Kiṣkindhā, 397; boon of, from Brahmā,

- 525; cut down in battle, 565; declares prowess in leaping, 424; drinks nectar of immortality, 525, 560; fights and kills Aśaniprabha, 581–82; gods create, 787; in southern search party, 400, 411; invulnerability of, 525; number of troops of, 397; participates in Sugrīva's consecration, 380; Rāma gives gifts to, 726; son of the Aśvins, 397, 525, 564; takes picket duty, 543. *See also* Maında
- dwarf: *rākṣasa* woman as, 462
- dwarf incarnation of Viṣṇu (*vāmanāvatāra*): story of, 81–82
- earth: entering of, by Sītā, 19, 843
- earth goddess. *See* Dharaṇī; Mādhavī; Vasudhā
- eastern quarter: description of, 398–400; dispatching of search party to, 398–400, 407
- eastern search party: dispatching of, to northern quarter, 398–400, 407; failure of, to find Sītā, 408–9; Vinata as leader of, 398, 407
- eating: of dogs' flesh forbidden, 114; of five-clawed creatures, 370; of lizard by brahmins and kshatriyas, 370; of meat, 187, 227–29, 451, 611, 788, 812, 791; of own corpse, 278, 824–25. *See also* flesh; flesh-eating; flesh of humans
- Ekākṣipīṅgala (epithet of Kubera Vaiśravaṇa): etymology of name of, 748
- ekaveṇī* (single braid). *See* Sītā: braid of elements, fear Rāvaṇa, 315, 318–19; grieve for Sītā, 325
- elephants who support the earth: sons of Sagara encounter, while digging up the earth, 92–93. *See also* Bhadra; Mahāpadma; Saumanasa; Virūpākṣa
- elixir of immortality. *See* nectar of immortality
- embalming. *See* corpses, preservation of; preservation, of bodies
- emendations: based on manuscript evidence, 6n
- emic history of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 34, 37–40
- epics: historicity of, 37; of Aryan society, 40
- etic history of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 34
- etymology: of “Ahalā,” 774; of “*apsaras*,” 98; of “*aśoka*,” 334; of “*asura*,” 98; of “Ayoḍhyā,” 240; of “Daṇḍa,” 827; of “Ekākṣipīṅgala,” 748; of “Hanumān,” 426, 561, 784; of “Janaka,” 805; of “Jātarūpa,” 90; of “Mānasa,” 77; of “Māruta,” 99; of “Mithi,” 805; of “Pañcāpsaras,” 247; of “*putra*,” 249; of “*rākṣasa*,” 732; of “Rāvaṇa” 768; of “Saramā,” 747; of “Sarayū,” 77; of “Śatrughna,” 815; of “Sītā,” 118; of “Skanda,” 90; of “*śloka*,” 55; of Tripaṭhaga, 88; of “*yakṣa*,” 732
- exemplary story/stories, Budha tells, to Ila, 836; of dove offering own flesh, 551–52; Lakṣmaṇa tells, of Indra, 830–33; Rāma tells, of Ila, 833–37. *See also* cautionary tales
- exile: of Asamañja, 97; of Lakṣmaṇa (*see* Lakṣmaṇa: Rāma banishes); of Rāma (*see* Rāma: Daśaratha exiles); of Sugrīva (*see* Sugrīva: Vālin exiles)
- falcons: fourth path in sky that of, 419
- fasting: of Agastya, 277; of ascetics, 264, 302, 348; of Bharata, 722; Bharata threatens, against Rāma, 253; of Durvāsas, 850; of Kausalyā, 230; of Mārīca, 303; as a means of death, 414, 454; of Rāma, 223, 251, 306; of Sītā, 459, 465, 483, 518, 521, 544, 655, 796; of Svayaṃprabhā, 412; of wives of Daśaratha, 223
- fast to death: Aṅgada urges monkeys to, 414; decision of Aṅgada to, 416, 417; decision of southern search party to, 14, 414, 416–18, 454, 486; of Tārā, 375, 377; of wives of Vālin, 375
- fate: *passim*; as Kāla, 343; contrasted with human action, 110, 659, 156; Rāma reflects upon, 852; Rāma relies on, as well as human effort, 488; Rāvaṇa under the power of, 329, 489, 693, 756; Sītā blames, for her suffering, 469, 704, 802; Sītā's abduction ordained by, 469; for what cannot be explained, 155; wife must follow her husband's, 161. *See also* destiny
- feeding: of Bharata and his army by Bharadvāja, 226–29; brahmins and guests at *aśvamedha*, 55–67, 838–39
- feticide, 209–10, 263; Indra attempts, 99; poison as a means of, 252; by surgeon, 477
- fire, *passim*; as witness, 346 356, 359, 523. *See also* Agni, as witness
- fire ordeal. *See* ordeal by fire
- five-clawed creatures: eating of, 370
- five-headed serpents, 388, 431, 449, 509, 511, 684–85
- flesh: Agastya eats, of Vātāpi (*rākṣasa*), 275–76; battleground thick with, 580, 715; birds and beasts that eat, as inauspicious omens, 290, 600; body of Dundubhi heavier with, 363, carnivorous beasts gorge on, 679; carrion birds gorge on, 286, 599–600, 652; crow as hungry for, 492; demons as eaters of, 613; dove offers own, 551; eating of dogs' forbidden, 114;

flesh (*continued*)

Garuḍa eats, of tortoise and elephant, 303; Kumbhakarṇa craves, 626; Kumbhakarṇa drenches earth with, 624; lions as eaters of, 196; malignant spirits crave, of *gandharvas*' sons, 845; marks Narāntaka's path, 632; Muṣṭikas as eaters of dogs', 111; of black deer fit for sacrifice, 191; of gazelles, 342; of goats given to brahmins, 212–13; of monkeys forbidden to brahmans and kshatriyas, 370; of Śarabhaṅga consumed by sacrificial fire, 268; of stag eaten by tiger, 373; offering of, for eating, 812–13; Śveta eats own, 825; Triśiras as eater of raw, 303; vultures become eaters of, 419

flesh-eating: by beasts, 196, 290, 330, 758, 846; by *rākṣasas*, 83, 196, 290, 332, 334, 441, 474, 521, 587, 613, 732, 780; by spirits, 846. *See also* cannibalism; eating: of meat

flesh of humans: ascetics who mistreat guests destined to eat own, 278; ferocious creatures eat, 158–59; eating of, 812–13; illusory cook offers, to Saudāsa, 812; Mārica eats (of seers), 305–6; *rākṣasas* as eaters of, 28, 83, 87, 273, 276, 288, 327, 332, 334, 346, 587, 603, 612, 732, 780; *rākṣasa* women as eaters of, 330, 462, 472, 475, 521; Saudasa cursed eat, 813; Śveta cursed to eat his own, 825; Vasiṣṭha offered, 813; Vātāpi and Ilvala eat, 276; Virādha eats, 256

floral garland, 25, 137, 166, 320, 380, 391, 448, 465, 646, 650; of Sugriva, 25, 365 (*see also* *gajapuṣpī* garland)

floral offerings, 176, 265, 264, 275, 278, 282, 348, 356, 395, 446, 451, 583, 641, 703, 776, 790

flying chariot(s): of Brahmā, 733; of Daśaratha; 711–12; of the gods, 609, 702, 708, 713, 845, *passim*; of Indra, 267;—Rāma uses, 689–90; returns to heaven, 702; of Indrajit, 32, 764 (*see also* Indrajit); of Rāvaṇa, 302, 309, 320, 701;—Jaṭāyus destroys, 322–23. *See also* chariots; Puṣpaka(vimāna)

framing narrative: of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 9

fraternal conflict: as theme of *Mahābhārata*, 26;—of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 24–28. *See also* sibling rivalry

full-moon day, 107, 149, 682, 788; of Āṣāḍha, 383

full-moon night, 138, 176, 485

full-moon rites, 106

funerary libations, 56, 93, 94, 95, 97; for Jaṭāyus by Rāma 342;—by Sampāti,

420; for Vālin by Sugriva, 360. *See also* water-offerings

funerary rites, 202, 208, 209, 222, 241, 812, 820, for Daśaratha, 212–13; for Rāvaṇa, 28, 30, 34, 702, for Vālin, 378–79

Gādhi (king), 755; son of Kuśanābha, 86, 104; Viśvāmitra son of, 72, 104, 105, 108

Gaja (monkey troop leader), 390, 411, 541, *passim*; fights and kills Tapana, 581; leader of one hundred million monkeys, 560; marches before the army, 540; member of southern search party, 400; participates in Sugriva's consecration, 380; prowess in jumping of, 424; one of the five sons of Vaivasvata, 564

*gajapuṣpī* garland: as distinguishing feature, 364; Lakṣmaṇa gives to Sugriva, 364–65

Gandhamādana, 574, 580, 587, 641, 643, 788, *passim*; exhaustion of, 410, 411 413; arrival of, in Kiṣkindhā, 397; declares prowess in jumping, 424; launches attack on Indrajit's horses, 669; marches on left flank of army, 540; member of southern search party, 400; number of monkey troops of, 397; one of the five tigers among monkeys, 623;—sons of Vaivasvata, 564; participates in Sugriva's consecration, 380

Gandhamādana (monkey troop leader), 380; advises southern search party, 410, 424, ; declares prowess in jumping, 424; leads left flank of army, 540; member of southern search party, 400, 411; number of troops of, 397; one of five sons of Vaivasvata, 564;—“tigers among monkeys,” who rush Kumbhakarṇa, 623

Gandhamādana (mountain), 189, 458

Gāndhāra (name of a region), 847

*gandharva*(s) (class of semi-divine beings), 52, 57, 68, *passim*; armies of, battle Bharata's army, 846–47; Babhru as, 402; Bharadvāja invokes, to entertain Bharata, 227–28; Bhikṣu as, 402; of gods, 227; Gopa as, 228; Grāmaṇī as, 402; Haha as, 227; Huhu as, 227; king(s) of, 228;—Rāma as image of, 133, 170;—and Lakṣmaṇa as images of, 286; lords of, 228, 402; Nārada as, 228; Parvata as, 228; Rohitas as class of, 402; Śailūṣa as, 402, 747; Śubhra as, 402; Sūryavarcasa as, 228; Tumburu as, 228; 266; Viśvāvasu as, 435; weapon-spell of, 705

*gandharva* woman/women (class of semi-divine beings): Alambusā as, 228; gods father sons on, 70; Miśrakeśī as, 228; Narmadā as, 734; Puṇḍarikā as,

- 228; Somadā as, 85, 101–2; Vāmanā as, 228; Vasudā ass, 734
- Gandhi: on Rāmarāja, 42
- Ganges (name and personification of river) (Jāhnavī, Bhāgirathī, Mandākini, Tripaṭhaga), 182, 184, 745, 755, 766, 776, 778; as Bhāgirathī, 96, 186, 188, 222, 298, 795; Bharata encamps at, with army, 220–24;—ferries across, 224–25; birthplace of Agni, 732; daughter of Himalaya, 87–88; descent of, to earth, 94–97; as Jāhnavī, 14, 77, 84, 87, 184, 217, 259, 79–97, 811; as Mandākini, 745, 766; Rāma fords (Mandākini), 186–87;—has Lakṣmaṇa abandon Sītā on banks of, 794–97; role of in Skanda's birth, 89–90; Śiva checks fall of (Mandākini), 95;—releases, into Lake Bindu, 95; Sītā makes vow to, 186–87;—wishes to visit (Mandākini), 791; as Tripaṭhaga, 88
- Gārgya (son of Aṅgiras): *guru* and messenger of Yudhājī, 845–46
- Gārgya Trijaṭa. *See* Trijaṭa Gārgya
- garland(s). *See* floral garland; *gajapuṣpī* garland; gold garland; gold necklace
- garuḍa* (name of a military formation), 563
- Garuḍa (Vainateya, Suparna), 159, 266, 307, 329, 368, 593, 736, 778, *passim*; advises Aṁśumant, 93–94; ascetics rescued by, 302–3; as *avis ex machina*, 24; drives off *rākṣasas*, 737, 740;—serpent weapons of Indrajit, 592–93; as enemy of snakes, 23, 24, 175, 373, 427, 430, 468, 499, 506, 592–93, 609, 624, 629, 633, 644, 779, 781; fights Mālin, 738–39; forced to retreat by Mālin, 738–39; as Garutmant second life breath of Rāma, 592; genealogy of, 280–81; Hanumān as celebrated as, 425; heads toward Meru, 644; heals serpent wounds of Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 592; one of three who can cross ocean, 495, 535, 537; power of, 427, 782;—of, to cross ocean, 495, 535;—of vision of, 419; Rāma's arrow fletched with feathers of, 698; ravages Niṣāda realm, 303; sister of Sumati, 91, son of Vinatā, 280; steals nectar, 302–3; uncle of Aṁśumant, 93; as Vainateya drives off Mālyavān, 740; Viśvakarman constructs residence of, 399; weapon spell of, 690; weapon spell of, 690
- Gautama: and Ahalyā, 100–102; asceticism of, 774; ashram of, 100, 774, 802; Brahmā gives Ahalyā to, 774; cures Indra, 774; curses Ahalyā, 101, 774;—Indra to lose testicles, 101; husband of Ahalyā, 774; one of the seven seers, 728; performs sacrifice for Nimi, 802
- Gavākṣa (langur), 390, 400, 573, *passim*; arrival of, in Kiṣkindhā, 397; declares prowess in jumping, 424; fights Kumbhakarṇa, 623; and Gavaya march in lead, 540; joins fight against Mahāpārśva, 682; king of langurs, 397; leads seven million monkeys, 558; langur, 560, 580, member of southern search party, 400; one of five sons of Vaivasvata, 564;—“tigers among monkeys,” who rush Kumbhakarṇa, 623; participates in Sugrīva's consecration, 380; troop leader of the langurs, 559
- Gavaya (monkey), 390, 540, 574, *passim*; and Gavākṣa, march in lead, 540; brings golden vessel of camphor and sandalwood paste, 725; declares prowess in jumping, 424; leads seven million monkeys, 558; member of southern search party, 400, 411; participates in Sugrīva's consecration, 380; son of Vaivasvata, 564; surrounded by one hundred million monkeys, 560
- gender transformation: of animals 833; of Ila and his attendants, 833–34; of Siva, 833
- genealogy: of creatures as narrated by Jaṭayus, 280–81; of Garuḍa, 280–81; of Ikṣvākus, 121–122, 303–4; of Janaka, 122–23; of *rākṣasas*, 16, 729–35; of Rāvaṇa and his siblings, 16, 740–42; of solar dynasty, 251–52; of Viśvāmītra, 103. *See also* lineage
- Ghṛtāci, (*apsaras*): attachment of Viśvāmītra to, 392; mother of hundred daughters of Kuśānābha, 84
- Girivraja (city): founded by Vasu, 84, 204. *See also* Rājagṛha
- Go (unidentified): fights Rāvaṇa, 761; goes forth with Puṣkara, 761
- god: of craft (*see* Viśvakarman); of death (*see* Dharmarāja; Kāla; Mṛtyu; Vaivasvata); of fire (*see* Agni); of love (*see* Kāma); of marriage (*see* Bhaga); of ocean (*see* Sāgara; Varuṇa); of rain (*see* Parjanya); of righteousness (*see* Dharma); of sun (*see* Sūrya); of waters (*see* Varuṇa); of wealth (*see* Kubera Vaiśravaṇa); of wind (*see* Vāyu)
- Godāvarī (river), 279, 281–84, 342, *passim*; fears Rāvaṇa, 315; Rāma questions, 336; Sītā implores, for aid, 321;—threatens to drown herself in, 314
- goddesses. *See individual names*
- gods: Aditi gives birth to, 744; age of, 267; ask Viṣṇu to kill sons of Sukeśa, 735; assembly of, witness Sītā's oath, 842; Brahmā calms fears of, 816–17; Brhaspati as *purohita* of, 339; drive off *rākṣasa* army, 771; fight *rākṣasas*, 769–73; grant boons

gods (*continued*)

to Lakṣmaṇa, 817;—to animals, 754; —to Hanumān, 785–86; honor Hanumān, 436; Indrajit breaks army of, 770; Mālin battles, 738–49; perform *āśvamedha* for Indra, 832; plead with Viṣṇu to incarnate, 10, 68–69; remind Brahmā of Kumbhakarṇa's crimes, 743; seek aid of Agastya, 276; and seers, take refuge with Śiva, 735; shrines to, at Agastya's ashram, 278; as sons of Aditi, 97–98, 280, 744; stop Brahmā from granting boon to Kumbhakarṇa, 743; Sumālin battles, 739–40; supplicate Brahmā for relief, 784–85; take on forms of animals, 754; take refuge with Śiva (Maheśvara), 735; test Hanumān, 434–35; visit ashram of Agastya, 823; worship Lakṣmaṇa as fourth part of Viṣṇu, 851. *See also individual names*

golden deer. *See* Mārīca: becomes a golden deer

golden image: of Sitā, 18, 838

golden tree. *See* omens

gold garland: of Indra (Vāsava), 784; of Vālin, 376–77, 781 (*see also* gold necklace)

gold necklace: Indra has Vāyu give Rāma, 725; of Sugrīva, 561; Vālin receives, from Indra (Śakra), 263, 368–69. *See also* gold garland

Gomatī (river), 181, 206, 557, 718, 722, 795, 799, 838

*gomedha* (cow sacrifice), 764

Gomukha (son of Mātali), 770

*gosava* (name of sacrifice), 845

*gośirṣa* sandalwood, 390

Govinda. *See* Viṣṇu

Grāmaṇī (*gandharva* lord), 402; Devavātī daughter of, 733

grammar: Hanumān learns, 787

grief: of abducted women, 762–63; of Aṅgada (*see* Aṅgada: grief of); of Ayodhyā (*see* Ayodhyā: grief of); of Bharata (*see* Bharata: grief of); of brahman father of dead child, 820; of Daśaratha (*see* Daśaratha: grief of, for Rāma); of Daśaratha's wives (*see* Daśaratha: grief of wives of); destroys everything, 197; of Devayānī, 806; of the forest, 194–97; of Hanumān (*see* Hanumān: grief of); of Ila (*see* Ila: grief of); impossible to withstand unexpected, 197; as inspiration for the *Rāmāyaṇa*, 54–55; of Janaka (*see* Janaka: grief of), 202; of Kausalyā (*see* Kausalyā: grief of); of Lakṣmaṇa (*see* Lakṣmaṇa: grief of); of Madhu, 808; of Mālin's brothers, 739; of Mandodari, 700–701; as metaphor of,

as ocean, 214, 288; of monkey women (*see* monkey women: grief of); of monkeys (*see* monkeys: grief of); of mothers of slain *rākṣasas*, 501; of no use to the dead, 378; of parents of slain ascetic, 199–201; of the people of Ayodhyā, 11, 168, 170–72, 174–75, 180, 259, 315, 326–30, 332, 515, 815; of Rāma (*see* Rāma: grief of); of Rāvaṇa (*see* Rāvaṇa: grief of); of Sampāti (*see* Sampāti: grief of); of Śatrughna (*see* Śatrughna: grief of); of Sugrīva (*see* Sugrīva: grief of); as a sea, 214; of Sitā (*see* Sitā: grief of); of Sumantra (*see* Sumantra: grief of); of Surabhi, 210–11; of Śūrpaṅakhā (*see* Śūrpaṅakhā: grief of); of Tārā (*see* Tārā: grief of); of *rākṣasa* women (*see* *rākṣasa* women: grief of); sight of Rāma will allay, 219; of the women of Ayodhyā, 174, 180, 201–2; of women abducted by Rāvaṇa, 762–64; of wounded ascetic, 198; vitiates efforts, 538

guardian elephants (*diggajas*). *See* Añjana; Mahāpadma; Padma; Vāmana

guest-offering(s) (*arghya*[s]), 55, 62, 72, 77, 102, 182, 126, 189, 225, 226, 278, 717, 757, 780, 797, 812, 818, 848

Guha (1), 41, 191, 194, 238, 605, 717–18; extends hospitality to Bharata, 220–25, 236;—to Rāma, 182–86; extols virtues of Lakṣmaṇa to Bharata, 221–22; ferries Bharata and army across Ganges River, 224–25; Rāma dismisses, 186

Guha (2). *See* Skanda

*guhya*kas, 291, 628, 638, 785; with Kubera on Mt. Kailāsa, 405

Haha (*gandharva* lord), 227

Haihayas, 252, 775, 778, 780; Arjuna

Kārtavīrya king of, 775, 778–79, 780

hair. *See* Sitā: braid of

hair ornament: of Sitā, 56, 494, 497, 532, 534

*haṃsa*(s), 87, 95, 159, *passim*; Puṣpaka yoked to, 825; sixth path in sky that of, 419; Varuṇa grants boon to, 755; yearning of, to live on Lake Mānasa, 382

hanging: as a means of suicide, 454; Sitā threatens, 314, 478

Hanumān: ability of, to leap the ocean, 426, 437; adoptive son of Kesarin, 397, 428; advises Sugrīva, 384–85, 389–90; Agastya praises, 787; Añjanā mother of, 426; announces Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa to Sūgrīva, 356; arrives in Laṅkā, 436–39; asks permission to kill Sitā's wardresses, 704; attacks and burns Laṅkā, 14, 27, 514–15, 540, 544, 782–83; attacks and is driven back by Indrajit, 656; attempts

to devour Airāvata, 784; battles *rākṣasas*, 499–506, 513–14;—recalled, 782–83; bears Sitā's message to Rāma, 704–5; Bharata gives gifts to, 719; birth of, 425–26, 487, 783; boons of, 426, 508, 785–86; Brahmā revives, 785; brahmans curse, 786; breaks free of bonds, 514; brings healing herbs for Lakṣmaṇa, 645, 688;—water for Rāma's consecration, 725; broods, 438–42, 445, 452–55, 460, 515, 688; carries Lakṣmaṇa from battlefield, 608; challenges Indrajit to combat, 663; character synopsis of, 26–27; childhood of, 16, 426, 560–61, 783–87; consoles Sitā, 14, 487–90, 495–96, 516; commits offenses against the seers, 786; confidence of, 427–28; confidence of Rāma in, 407;—of Sugrīva in, 406–7; considers pros and cons of accosting Sitā, 478–80; consoles Tārā, 375; contemplates killing Rāvaṇa, 455;—suicide, 455; counselor of Sugrīva, 13, 27, 356, 390; crushes Mount Ariṣṭa, 516–17;—Mount Mahendra, 428–30, 517;—mountains in leaping, 644; decides on language to address Sitā, 479;—to assault *rākṣasas*, 498; describes Laṅkā and defenses, 539;—Rāma to Sitā, 483–85; descriptions of, 26–27, 379, 406, 425, 431; destroys armies of Rāvaṇa's field marshals, 503; devastates Laṅkā, 14, 540, 544; as devotee of one's lord, 5;—of Rāma, 27, 31;—of Rāma and Sitā, 26, 789; did not know his own strength, 783; divinity of, 27; does not follow Rāma to heaven, 27, 853; dragged before Rāvaṇa, 508; elation of, 440, 450, 460, 463, 526; eloquence of, 353–56, 479, 550; encounters Indrajit, 506–9;—Mount Maināka, 432–34, 716;—Surasā, 434–35; encounters and kills Siṃhikā, 436; enters the *aśoka* grove, 456; epithets of, 45; essential actor in Sitā's rescue, 494; etymology of name of, 426, 561, 784–85; exhorts Aṅgada, 415;—monkeys, 625, 657; fears consequences of his failure, 454;—he has killed Sitā, 515; feats of, 27, 782–83, *passim*;—Rāma recounts, 783–84; fetches mountain of healing herbs, 644–45, 688; fights and is stunned by Kumbhakarna, 623–24;—by Rāvaṇa, 605–6; fights and kills Akampana (1), 597–98;—Akṣa, 504–5;—Bhāsakarna, 503;—Devāntaka, 634;—Dhūmrākṣa, 594–96;—Durdhara, 503;—Jambumālin (1), 500–501;—Jambumālin (2), 581;—Nikumbha, 650–51;—Praghasa, 503;—*rākṣasas*, 499–506;—seven sons of minister, 501–2;

—Triśiras, 634–35;—Virūpākṣa, 503;—Yūpākṣa, 503; fights and stuns Rāvaṇa, 608; finds and consoles Sitā, 14, 459–97; fire does not burn, 514; flatters Sitā, 481; flees Kumbhakarna, 622; friendship of, with Sugrīva, 787; gives signet ring of Rāma to Sitā, 14, 27, 487, 522;—Sitā's hair ornament to Rāma, 532; gods grant boons to, 785–86;—honor, 436; greatest leaper, 426–27; grief of, 453, 455, 656–57; history of, recounted by Agastya, 18, 783–87; Indra grants boons to, 785–86; Indrajit fights and captures with divine weapons, 14, 32, 56, 507–8;—pierces with arrows, 666; informs Sugrīva of safety on Mount Rśyamūka, 408; introduces Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa to Sugrīva, 356; Jāmbavān instructs, to bring healing herbs, 27, 643–44, 688;—praises, 426–27;—questions, 519;—sees, as only hope for survival, 643; jaw of, broken, 426, 784; kills a hundred palace guards, 500;—*kiṃkaras*, 499–500;—Siṃhikā, 436; kindles fire to solemnize pact, 356; Kubera grants boons to, 786; as langur (*Semnopithecus entellus*) 47; leader of Sugrīva's companions, 359; leads monkeys into cavern of Svayamprabhā, 411–12; leaping of, 14, 53, 56, 429–37, 516–18, 547, 561, 706;—to mountain of healing herbs, 644–45, 688;—to sun, 426–27; learns grammar, 787; length of life of, 789, 853; life span of, as “long-lived one (*cirajivin*),” 25, 27, 853; Maināka provides resting place for, 432; mauls Rāhu, 784–85; meets Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 13, 53, 56, 354–56;—Sitā, 480–97, 516–17; member of southern search party, 13, 400, 410; messenger of Rāma, 482–83, 486, 510–11;—of Sugrīva, 510; mind of, undisturbed by sight of Rāvaṇa's women, 452; mistakes Airāvata for fruit, 784;—Mandodarī for Sitā, 450;—the sun for fruit, 783; monkey nature of, 450, 515; monkeys delighted at success of mission of, 518; mourns fallen Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 585; never lies, 355; observes *rākṣasa* women, 462;—Rāvaṇa, 14, 448–49, 463–64;—Rāvaṇa's women in the drinking hall, 446–48;—the *rākṣasas*, 440–52;—Sitā, 462–65; offers to carry Sitā back to Rāma, 14, 490–92; paraded through Laṅkā with tail on fire, 513; participates in consecration of Sugrīva, 380; plans to console Sitā, 479;—kill *rākṣasa* champions, 498; power of, to leap ocean unique, 14; Prahasta interrogates, 509–10; praises Rāma to Sitā,

Hanumān (*continued*)

483–85; prepares to leap ocean, 427–28; questions Svayamprabhā, 412; *rākṣasas* bind, 508–10;—set tail of, on fire, 513–14; Rāma asks Agastya history of, 782–83;—dispatches, to tell Sītā of victory, 34, 703;—dispatches, to Ayodhyā as messenger to Bharata, 717–19;—gives gifts to, 788–89;—gives, pearl necklace, 789;—gives, signet ring as token of recognition, 14, 407;—orders Sugrīva and, to care for Lakṣmaṇa, 687;—orders Vibhiṣaṇa and, to remain on earth, 853;—praises, 537, 782–83;—questions, about Sītā, 533;—tells Vibhiṣaṇa and, to remain alive, 853; ravages *aśoka* grove and domed palace, 498, 500; Rāvaṇa falsely reports, as slain, 565; Rāvaṇa orders execution of, 511;—*kiṃkaras* to capture, 499;—tail of, set on fire, 513;—sentences to death, 512; reassured by auspicious omens, 515–16; rebukes Sugrīva for negligence, 389–90; recounts adventures in Laṅkā to monkeys, 519–24;—to Rāma, 531–32; reflects on propriety of observing Rāvaṇa’s women, 452;—Sītā’s history and appearance, 460–61; relationship of, to Sāgara, 433;—to Vāyu, 432; released from Brahma’s weapon, 508; remains alive as long as *Rāmāyaṇa* remains current, 853; replaces mountain of healing herbs, 645; reports adventures of Rāma to Bharata, 719–21;—adventures to Rāma and Sugrīva, 14–15, 531–32;—apparent murder of Sītā to Rāma, 658;—on Laṅkā’s defenses, 539–40;—Rāma’s return to Bharata, 719;—Rāma’s return to Guha, 717–18;—Rāma’s victory to Sītā, 703;—to monkeys on his mission, 518–24;—to Rāma on his meeting with Sītā, 531–36; requests release from cave (cavern) of Maya, 413; resolves to leap the ocean, 429; retells adventures of Rāma and the monkeys, 485–86;—exile of Rāma to Rāvaṇa, 510–11;—Sītā of Rāma’s exile, 480, 485–86; reviles Indrajit, 656; Sāgara seeks rest for, on Mount Maināka, 432; sanctions monkeys’ assault on Madhuvana, 14, 527; searches *aśoka* grove, 455–59;—for healing herbs, 27, 645, 688;—for Sītā in Laṅkā, 14, 439–59, for Sītā in Laṅkā, recalled, 531–32, 782;—Rāvaṇa’s inner apartments, 56, 452–53, 520, 531–32;—Rāvaṇa’s palace, 442–45; seeks refuge with Svayamprabhā, 413; seers curse, 786; serves as Rāma’s mount, 540, 608; sets fire to Laṅkā, 14, 27, 514–15;

shaken by power of Rāvaṇa, 464; Sīmḥikā seizes shadow of, 436; Sītā begs, to stay in Laṅkā, 495;—denies knowing, 498–99;—exhorts, 494–95;—fears, 481–83;—gives gifts to 726;—gives, hair ornament, 494, 497;—gives, hair ornament, recounted, 532;—gives, her message to Rāma, 496–97;—gives, pearl necklace, 726;—prays to Agni for fire not to burn, 513–14;—questions, about Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 487–89;—refuses offer of, to rescue, 14, 490–92;—tells, of Rāma’s banishment and her abduction, 481–82;—tells, the crow episode, 492–93;—thinks, is Rāvaṇa, 482; Śiva grants boons to, 786; size of, changeable, 412, 427, 429–30, 435–36, 438–39, 455–56, 490, 497–98, 514, 517, 534; son of the wind god, 27, 355–56, 427, *passim*; sows dissension among monkeys, 415; speaks in favor of accepting Vibhiṣaṇa, 551;—Sanskrit, 479; speed of, 430–31, 435, 644; stationed at Laṅkā’s western gate, 574; submits to the power of Brahmā’s weapon, 508; Sugrīva instructs, to find Sītā, 406;—orders, to summon monkeys, 394;—praises, 529;—sends, to meet Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 353–54; Surasā asked to create an obstacle for, 434; surveys Laṅkā, 437–42, 513; Sūrya does not burn, 432, 783;—grants boons to, 786; Suṣeṇa instructs, to bring healing herbs, 27, 688; takes form of a mendicant, 354; takes on human form, 718; Tārā rejects advice of, 375; tears off peak of mountain of healing herbs, 645, 688; tells Rāma Sītā’s message, 532; tells Rāvaṇa to return Sītā, 511–12;—Svayamprabhā of search party’s adventures, 413; terrorizes Sītā’s *rākṣasa* wardresses, 498–99; tries to devour Airāvata, 784;—the sun, 426–27, 783; unable to find healing herbs, 645, 688; unburnt through Sītā’s truth-act, 513–14; urges monkeys to drink honey-wine, 527; Varuṇa grants boons to, 786; Vāyu as divine father of, 426, 783; Vibhiṣaṇa and, searches for survivors, 642–43; Vibhiṣaṇa dissuades Rāvaṇa from executing, 512–13; Viśvakarma grants boons to, 786; warns Rāvaṇa of his destruction, 511–12; witnesses murder of illusory Sītā, 655–56; wreaks destruction among the *rākṣasas*, 663, 668; Yama grants boons to, 786

Hara. *See* Śiva

Hara (monkey troop leader), 558, 574

Hara (*rākṣasa* son of Mālin), 734

harem. *See* inner apartments

- Hari. *See* Viṣṇu (Hari)  
*hariśyāma* sandalwood, 402  
Hāritas (tribal clan): produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 107  
*Harivaṃśa*, 21  
Hastinapura, 35–36, 204  
Hayagrīva (*dānava*): Viṣṇu kills, 403  
healing herbs, 27, 430; Bṛhaspati restores *dānavas* with, 591–92; Hanumān fetches, 644–45, 688; mountain of, 643, 645; on Mount Candra, 592; on Mount Droṇa, 592; *mṛtasaṃjivāṇī*, “restorer of life,” 592, 643; *saṃdhānī*, “joiner of limbs,” 643; *saṃjivakaraṇī*, “restorer of life,” 592, 643; *sauvarṇakaraṇī*, “restorer of the golden glow,” 643; Suśeṇa recounts story of, 591–92; *viśalyā(karaṇī)*, “healer of arrow wounds,” 159, 592, 643  
hedgehog: eating of, 370  
Hemā (*apsaras*): Brahmā grants boon to, 412; friendship of, with Svayamprabhā, 412; mother of Mandodarī, 746; relationship of, with Maya, 412; wife of Maya, 746  
herb(s): for healing, 27, 430;—Bṛhaspati restores *dānavas* with, 591–92;—Hanumān fetches, 644–45, 688;—mountain of, 643, 645;—on Mount Candra, 592;—on Mount Droṇa, 592;—*mṛtasaṃjivāṇī*, “restorer of life” as, 592, 643;—*saṃdhānī*, “joiner of limbs” as, 643; *saṃjivakaraṇī*, “restorer of life” as, 592, 643; *sauvarṇakaraṇī*, “restorer of the golden glow” as, 643; Suśeṇa recounts story of, 591–92; *viśalyā(karaṇī)*, “healer of arrow wounds” as, 159, 592, 643; for protection, 630  
Heti: founds lineage of *rākṣasas*, 732; marries Bhayā (sister of Kāla), 732  
Himagiri (mountain): *siṃha* birds live on slope of, 402  
Himalaya (mountain personified): Dundubhi challenges to fight, 362; father-in-law of Śiva (Śaṅkara), 362; gives Ganges to gods, 87; in northern quarter, 404; refuses to fight with Dundubhi, 362; takes form as cloud, 362  
Himalayas (mountain or mountain range), 27, 30, 51, *passim*  
Hinduism, 37; cosmic cycles in, 4 (see also *yuga[s]*), 4; cyclical time in, 37 (see also *yuga[s]*); divinities of, 4; in religious history of *Mahābhārata* and *Rāmāyaṇa*, 40; Vaiṣṇavism as movement of, 34  
historical narrative (*itihāsa*): *Rāmāyaṇa* as, 4, 36–37, 39  
historicity: of epics, 37; of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 36  
histories of the *Rāmāyaṇa*, 34–41  
history: concepts of, differ, 34; contestation over *Mahābhārata* as, 37; of discus of Viṣṇu, 403; of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 19; of *Rāmāyaṇa* as emic, 34, 37–40;—as etic, 34; of Śūrpaṅakhā, 33; of Vālin, 26; *Uttarakāṇḍa* tells, of *rākṣasas* and Rāvaṇa, 16  
*homa* (rite), 105  
Homer, 3  
honey-wine (*madhu*), 220, 394, 444, 542, 546, 647; drinking of, as sign of success, 529; as honey, 528; as honeycomb, 527; monkeys drink, 526–30; Rāma does not drink, 489; voided as urine, 529–30. *See also* Madhuvana  
horn bow (*śārṅga*): of Viṣṇu, 709, 737–38  
horse-faced fire: with mare’s head, 399  
House: of the Bhārgavas, 126; of Ikṣvāku, 51, 63, 95, 121–23, 329, 356, 432, 480, 515, 521, 532, 660, 711, 724, 756; of Janaka, 119, 454; of Kosala, 36, 690; of Kuśa, 86; of Rāghava, 74, 202, 216, 262, 316, 358, 433, 812; of Raghu, 537; of Rāvaṇa, 445  
household priest. *See purohita(s)*  
Hrī (goddess of modesty), 69, 315, 734, 853  
Hṛṣīkeśa. *See* Viṣṇu  
Huhu (*gandharva* lord), 227  
human effort: compared with fate, 706; destroys a person, 659; good for nothing, 110; one should devote oneself exclusively to, 659; righteousness as auxiliary to, 659; Triśaṅku attempts to overcome fate through, 110. *See also* manly effort  
human flesh. *See* cannibalism; flesh of humans  
hunchback: *rākṣasa* woman as, 462. *See also* Mantharā  
hunter(s). *See* Niṣāda(s)  
hunting: of Daśaratha, 198; of Ila, 833; of kings, 311–12, 372; of Kumbhakarna, 627; for golden deer, 312–13; of Lakṣmaṇa, 191; of men, 372; of Rāma, 72, 181–82, 312–13, 316, 480; of Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 187, 342; of Rāvaṇa, 746; of Saudāsa, 812; for Sitā, 346, 399, 403–4; for Sitā and Rāvaṇa, 400, 413  
ideals: of Aryan culture, 27–28  
ideal wife (*pativrata*): Kausalyā acts against norms of, 23–24; Sitā as, 5, 22  
Ikṣvāku (son of Manu, first king of Ayodhyā), 121–22, 251; Daṇḍa youngest son of, 827; fathers sons by means of sacrifices, 826–27; Nimi son of, 802; as son of Manu, 802, 826  
Ikṣvākus, 71, 109–10, 132, *passim*; ancestor of Rāma, 36; Buddha as offshoot of lineage of, 36; Daśaratha as lord of, 60;

**Ikṣvākus** (*continued*)

genealogy of, 121–22, 251–52; lineage of, 16, 36, 121–22, 170, *Rāmāyaṇa* tale of descendants of, 58. *See also* House: of Ikṣvākus; House: of Rāghava

**Ilā:** *āsvamedha* sacrifice of, 837; attains Brahmaloaka, 837; boons of, 834; founds Pratiṣṭhāna, 837; Kardama father of, 833, 837; renounces kingdom, 836; transformed into woman, 833–34

**Ilā:** gives birth to Purūravas, 836; Budha transforms attendants of, into *kimpuruṣa* women, 835; propitiates Umā, 834; recovers manhood through *āsvamedha*, 837

**Ilā/Ilā:** story of Śiva and Pārvatī and, 833–34; story of, and Budha, 834–37

**Ilīad**, 3

illusion (*māyā*). *See* power(s) of illusion

**Ilvala** (*asura*): Agastya eats, 276; and Vātāpi killed by Agastya, 276; and Vātāpi story of, 275–76

inauspicious omens: appear at birth of Rāvaṇa, 29, 741;—during fight between Rāma and Rāvaṇa, 690; charioteer of Rāvaṇa turns back because of, 693; golden trees presage death, 318, 326, 341; Kāla brings about, 736; Lakṣmaṇa observes, 314; Mālyavān Bhārata observes observed in Ayodhya, 207; observed in dreams, 205; presage abduction of Sitā, 314, 324, 330–31, 333; presage abandonment of Sitā, 794; presage death of king, 135;—of Rāvaṇa, 677; presage defeat of Akampana, 596;—of Dhūmrākṣa, 594;—of Khara, 289–91;—of Kumbhakarṇa, 621;—of Mahāpārśa, 679;—of Makarākṣa, 651;—of Prahasta, 600;—of Rāvaṇa, 695; presage destruction of Laṅkā, 474;—of *rākṣasas*, 37, 542, 571, 736–37; presage encounter with Kabandha, 342;—with Rāma Jāmadagnya, 125–26. *See also* auspicious omen(s); omen(s)

incarnation. *See* *avatāra* entries; co-*avatāras*

India, manuscript tradition in, 6

**Indra** (Mahendra, Śaci's lord, Śakra, Vāsava), 26, 32, 59, *passim*; abducts Hiraṇyakaśipu's wife, 466; *āsvamedha* of, 832–33; Bali Vairocana defeats, 81; becomes a peacock, 754; Brahmā asks, to recall his evil deed, 774; Brahmā asks Indrajit to release, 773–74;—gives arrow to, 278, 298; breaks Hanumān's jaw, 426; Brhaspati as *purohita* of, 723; carries off horse from Sagara's sacrifice, 91; casts Triśaṅku from heaven, 112; chariot of, 267–68, 770; crow son of, 493, 533; cuts off mountains' wings, 433; deforms Kabandha, 344; disguised as a

*rākṣasa*, 91; earth suffers drought in absence of, 832; enemy of Rāvaṇa, 69; enters Diti's body, 99; father of Vālin, 71, 345, 368;—Jayanta, 770; fights Rāvaṇa, 771–72; foretells great feat of Rāma, 267–68; Gautama curses, 101, 774; gives arrow, 298;—arrow and quivers to Agastya, 278; food to Sitā, 422;—Hanumān epithet, 785; and gods, ask Viṣṇu to kill Vṛtra, 831;—, fear Māndhātṛ, 814; gods and seers purify, 77; golden garland of, 784; grants boon to Hanumān, 785–86;—to peacock, 754–55; grants Diti's request, 99;—Maināka immunity, 434; horses of, 267; in story of sword-wielding ascetic, 272; Indrajit defeats, 31–32, 772–73;—releases, 773–74; and the killing of Mantharā, 79; and the killing of Vṛtra, 77, 830–32; kills Maya, 412;—Puloman, 397;—sons of Diti, 98;—Vṛtra, 830–32; king as fourth part of, 264; Maruts and, engage Kṛttikās, 90; orders capture of Rāvaṇa, 772;—Vāyu to give Rāma golden necklace, 725;—pearl necklace, 725; performs *vaiṣṇava* sacrifice, 775; Rāma sees, 267; Rāma's killing of Tātakā pleases, 79; rapes Ahalyā, 774; requests Viṣṇu to kill Rāvaṇa, 768; searches for Indrajit on Airāvata, 772; seduces Ahalyā, 100–101; seeks Hanumān on Airāvata, 784;—Rāvaṇi on Airāvata, 772; seizes sovereignty of the worlds, 98; sends Rambhā to tempt Viśvāmitra, 115–16;—weapons, chariot, and Mātali to Rāma, 689; sin of *brahmahatyā* taints, 77, 832; as slayer of *daityas*, 831; smashes Diti's fetus, 99; spares Śunaḥśepa, 114; steals Ambariṣa's sacrificial victim, 113; story of, and Diti; 97–99—, and Ahalyā, 100–102, 774–75; strikes Hanumān with *vajra*, 426, 784; *vajra* of, 339, 354, 449, *passim*; Vālin son of, 71, 345, 368; Vālin's gold necklace as gift from, 368–69; weapon-spell(s) of, 108 (Aindra), 628, 670; as wielder of *vajra*, 71, 157, 199, 210, 266, 268, 278, 456, 481, 506, 556, 617, 659–60, 697, 701, 722, 778, 832; as world guardian, 731

**Indrajānu** (monkey): arrival of, in Kiṣkindhā, 397

**Indrajit** (Rāvaṇi, Meghanāda), 5, 15, 506, *passim*; Aṅgada fights, 581, 583; arrows of, strike and fell monkeys, 641–43;—serpent sons of Kadrū become, 592; asceticism of, 661, 764, 773; asks Brahmā for immortality, 773; battles monkey army, 585, 641–43; binds and captures Hanumān, 14, 27, 32, 507–8; binds Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa with

- serpent arrows, 24, 32, 584–85; birth of, 747; boons of, 583, 654, 764, 773–74; bow of, 507, 764; Brahmā asks, to release Indra, 773;—denies immortality to, 773;—grants boons to, 583, 773–74;—grants epithet, “Conqueror of Indra,” 773;—grants powers to, 32; breaks army of gods, 669–770; chariot of, 507, 655, 764, 772; character synopsis of, 5, 15, 31–32; chariot of, destroyed by Aṅgada, 581; creates simulacrum of Sitā, 655–56; divine weapons and weapon-spells of, 508, 525, 584, 641–42, 661, 764; encounter of, with Hanumān, 506–9; exhorts Rāvaṇa, 640; fights and captures Hanumān, 14, 27, 32, 507–8; fights and captures Hanumān, recalled, 523; fights and captures Indrajit, 31–32, 772–73; fights Aṅgada, 581–82;—Vibhiṣaṇa, 667–68; Indra searches for, on Airāvata, 772; invisibility of, 5, 583–85, 654, 664, 772; kills six hundred and seventy million monkeys, 643; Lakṣmaṇa fights and kills, 22, 665–71; Meghanāda birth name of, 747; monkey army attacks, 662–63, 668; mount of, dolphin, 476; pierces Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa with arrows, 584–85, 642, 654–55;—with serpent weapons, 583–85; power of illusion of, 5, 572, 583, 588–89, 592, 641, 655–56, 661–62, 729, 772; Rāma dispatches monkeys to find, 584; Rāma hears of death of, 671;—sends Lakṣmaṇa to fight, 661; Rāvaṇa hears of death of, 672; releases Indra, 774; reports death of Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 586; sacrifice(s) (*agniṣṭoma*; *aśvamedha*; *bahusuvārṇaka*; *maheśvara*; *rājasūya*; *vaiṣṇava*) of, 32, 764;—interrupted, 663;—to be interrupted, 660–61;—in Nikumbhilā grove, 641, 653–54, 657–58, 764; serpent weapons of, 24, 32, 583–85; serpent weapons of, Garuḍa drives off, 592; sets forth to capture Hanumān, 507; Śiva gives chariot to, as boon, 764;—power of illusion to, 764; power of illusion of, called *tāmasī*, 764 infanticide, 209. *See also* feticide; child(ren): killing of
- inherent nature, 29, 554; as a translation of *dharma*, 46; force of, 378; of women, 701
- inner apartments (*antaḥpuram*, women’s quarters), 246, 784, 853; Agni testifies Sitā pure while in, 710; gazing upon, of another breach of propriety, 452; gendered politics of, 12; guard dogs of, 206; of Daśaratha, 64, 70, 143, 149, 151, 168, 173–74, 192–93;—women of, 173–74, 192–93, 246; Indrajit born in, 747; of Kausalyā, 151; of Rāma, 147, 311, 791, 853; of Rāvaṇa, 33, 327, 328, 450, 452, 466, 470, 471, 472, 572, 699, 765, 782;—Hanumān searches, 56, 452–53, 520, 531–32, 546;—for Sitā in, 327, 328, 532;—Vibhiṣaṇa enters to find Sitā, 705; of Romapāda, 63; of Vālin, 362, 367–68, 380, 391
- Islam, 37, 39, 42
- Islamic prince: Rāma as ideal of, 5n *iṣṭadevatā* (chosen divinity), 40 *itihāsa*. *See* historical narrative
- Jābāli (minister of Daśaratha), 64, 120, 203, 251, 255, 725, 821, 837, 841; encourages Rāma to accept kingship, 249–51
- jackals. *See* inauspicious omens
- Jāhnavī. *See* Ganges
- Jain canon, 35
- Jainism, 34, 37; cyclical time in, 37
- Jain versions: of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 5n, 36
- Jamadagni (one of the seven seers), 728
- Jāmadagnya. *See* Rāma Jāmadagnya
- Jāmbavān, 390, 415, 318, 788, *passim*; advises against Aṅgada’s plan, 525;—Rāma to view Vibhiṣaṇa with suspicion, 550; and other monkeys struck down in battle, 643; Aṅgada discouraged by, from jumping, 424–25; as bear, 27; declares youthful prowess, 424; directs Hanumān to bring healing herbs, 27, 643–44, 688; dissuades monkeys from plan to rescue Sitā, 525; fights Mahāpārśva, 682; gives monkeys leave to drink honey-wine, 526; guards rear of army, 541; Hanumān seeks out, on battlefield, 643; as king of apes (*rākṣas*), 27, 540, 573–74, 590–91, 658, 658, 661–62, 672, 682, 788; member of southern search party, 400, 411; participates in Rāma’s coronation, 725;—in Sugrīva’s consecration, 380; questions Hanumān, 519;—Supārśva, 419; Rāma sends forth, to battle, 658, 661;—sends forth, to battle Kumbha, 648; renders aid to Indra, 559; smashes Mahānāda with boulder, 601; son of Gadgada, 563; struck in battle, 565; summons the monkeys, 518; troops of, attack *rākṣasa* army, 668; urges Hanumān to jump, 425–27
- Jambumālin (*rākṣasa*) (1), 443, 506, 769; Hanumān fights and kills, 500–501
- Jambumālin (*rākṣasa*) (2): Hanumān fights and kills, 581; Rāvaṇa orders out, 522
- Janaka, 11, 21, 99, 336, *passim*; attends Daśaratha’s *aśvamedha*, 65; birth of, from Nimi’s body, 805; bow of, 83, 117–19;

Janaka (*continued*)

breaks siege of Mithilā, 118; etymology of name of, 805; finds Sitā while ploughing, 21, 118, 843; first king of Videha, 805; genealogy of, 122–23; grief of, 202; invites Daśaratha to Mithilā, 119–20; kills Sudhanvan, 123; sacrifice of, 83, 102, 117; Sitā daughter of (*see* Sitā)

Jānakī. *See* Sitā

Janamejaya, 200

*janapada*: as historical period, 35–37; meaning of word, 35

*janapada*(s): Aryan clans of, 35; of Kosala, 36

Janārdana. *See* Viṣṇu

Janasthāna, 52, 286, 288, *passim*; ascetics dwell in, 258; Jaṭāyus falls into, 422; located in Daṇḍaka forest, 828; Rāma battles army of fourteen thousand *rākṣasas* from, 292–94; Rāvaṇa dispatches eight *rākṣasas* to, 327–28; Sitā implores, for aid, 320; *See also* Daṇḍaka forest

Jātarūpaśila (mountain), 399

Jaṭāyus: age of, 322; ally of Kosalan court, 24; attempts to save Sitā, 13, 24, 52, 322–23; battle of, with Rāvaṇa described, 417–18; cremation of, 53, 342; death of, 341; falls into Janasthāna, 422; flies into sun, 418, 421–22; friendship of, with Daśaratha, 13, 279, 281, 417; funerary libations for, 342, 420; genealogy of creatures narrated by, 280–81; lineage of, 280–81; mortal wounding of, by Rāvaṇa, 13, 24, 323; on behavior toward others' wives, 321; Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa meet, 279–81; —see, mortally wounded, 340; Rāma asks, to protect Sitā, 312; Rāma tells, of Sitā's abduction, 340–41; rebukes Rāvaṇa 321–22; evidence of battle of, with Rāvaṇa, 337; fights Rāvaṇa, 322–23; reassures Rāma, 341; Saṃpāti and, make wager on Kailāsa, 421; Saṃpāti discovers death of, 417; Sitā's cries heard by, 321; story of, and Saṃpāti, 418, 421–22; younger brother of Saṃpāti, 14, 281, 416, 417

*javelin*(s) (*śakti*[s]), 47, 80, 289, *passim*; of Indra given to Rāma, 689; Lakṣmaṇa freed from, by herbs, 688; of Mālyavān pierces Viṣṇu, 740; of Maya given to Rāvaṇa, 746; Rāma removes and breaks Rāvaṇa's, 687;—shatters lance of Rāvaṇa with, of Indra, 691; of Rāvaṇa forged by Maya, 686;—strikes down Lakṣmaṇa, 686–87; Skanda as wielder of, 740; Skanda as wielder of, 740

jaw (hanu), Hanumān breaks, falling, 426, 561, 784; from *vajra*, 785

Jaya (father of Virādha), 266

Jayanta (minister of Daśaratha), 60, 204

Jayanta (son of Indra), fights Indrajit, 770; not slain, 775; Puloman carries from battlefield, 770; Puloman grandfather of, 770; son of Śacī, 770

jewel: Agastya gives, to Rāma, 824

jewelry, 58, 67, 564, *passim*; Anasūyā gives Sitā, 261; in disarray, 324; Hanumān sees, of Mandodarī, 450; Kaikeyi discards, 140, 142–43;—gives Mantharā, 139, 142; of Mantharā discards, 140;—shattered, 215; Rāvaṇa demands Sitā wear, 465–66; —promises, to Sitā, 327; of Sitā, 56, 224, 286, 791; in disarray, 324;—dropped, 326–27, 357;—monkeys find, 357;—shown to Rāma, 357. *See also* hair ornament; ornament(s); signet ring

Judeo-Christian religions, 37

jumping. *See* leaping

jump of Hanumān. *See* leaping: of Hanumān

Jyotirmukha (monkey): son of Sūrya, 564

*kyōtishōma* (rite), 68

Kabandha: describes Pampā, 346–47; description and history of, 343–44; directs Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa to Pampā, 347; —Rāma to Śabarī, 346–47; encounter of, with Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 32, 53, 56, 343–47;—recalled, 460, 564, 627, 677, 697, 716, 717, 720; Lakṣmaṇa cremates, 345;—cuts off left arm of, 343; Rāma cuts off right arm of, 343

Kadrū/Kadrukā: mother of snakes, 280–81; sister of Surasā, 280–81; sons of, hold up the earth, 281;—become Indrajit's arrows, 592

Kaikasi: curse of Viśravas on, 28–30, 741; daughter of Sumālin, 734, 740–41; inspires Rāvaṇa with sibling envy, 29, 742; mother of Rāvaṇa, Kumbhakarṇa, Vibhiṣaṇa, and Śūrpanakhā, 741; relationship of, with Viśravas, 28, 741

Kaikeyi: 811, 830, 845, *passim*; achieves desired goal, 265, 320, 332; Bharata reviles, 209–11; boon(s) of, 11, 23, 265, 316–17; boons of, as cause of misfortune, 417; character synopsis of, 24; claims boons from Daśaratha, 143–44; Daśaratha accedes to demands of, 11, 143–45; Daśaratha reviles, 144–45, 175; daughter of Aśvapati, 141, 164, 210; eats celestial porridge, 70; exile of Rāma ordered by, 24; gives birth to Bharata, 71; informs Bharata of Daśaratha's death, 207–9; —Bharata of Rāma's exile, 208–9;—Rāma of impending exile, 150; Kausalyā reviles, 202; Lakṣmaṇa criticizes, 283; Mantharā

- incites, 11–12, 24, 138–43; Mantharā maid-servant of, 11, 23, 24, 41; as middle mother, 265, 283; orders Rāma to wear barkcloth garments, 170–71; Rāma asks Bhadra about, 791; as Rāma's mother, 155, 186, 244, 283, 589, 791; receives boons from Daśaratha, 141; receives new brides, 128; recounts story of sons of Sagara to Daśaratha, 170; scheming of, 12, 23; story of, as cautionary tale, 24; travels to Citrakūṭa with other mothers, 219; as treacherous wife, 24
- Kailāsa (mountain), 77, 89, 125, *passim*; description of, 405; Kubera lives on, 405, 545, 766; location of, in northern quarter, 405; Mandodarī and Rāvaṇa took enjoyment on, 701; Puṣpaka comes to Rāma from, 789; Rāvaṇa fights Kubera on, 29, 299, 545, 749–51—and yakṣas on, 299; Rāvaṇa goes to, 299, 545, 749–51; Saṃpāti and Jaṭāyus make wager on, 421; Sugrīva instructs Śatabali to search foothills of, 405; Viśravas tells Kubera to found a city on, 745
- Kaiṭabha: and Madhu, 732, 759, 810, 817, 849
- Kākutstha. *See* Rāma
- Kakutstha (father of Raghu), 122, 252
- Kāla (god of death), 74, 320, 330, *passim*; Bhayā as sister of, 732; Brahmā creator of rod of, 760; Brahmā sends, to Rāma, 848–49; brings about bad omens, 736–37; cannot be withstood, 338; created by creative power of illusion (*māyā*), 848–49; discuss of, 108; Heti marries Bhayā sister of, 732; in guise of ascetic, 848; noose(s) of, 73, 80, 292, 298, 321, 323, 326, 512, 548, 574, 664, 760, 846; overtakes Rāvaṇa, 330; power of, 343, 587–88; Rāma's son in previous existence, 848–49; Rāvaṇa fights, 757–60; rod of, 749, 759–60, 769; *saṃvartāstra* (*saṃvarta*) as weapon of, 846. *See also* Dharmarāja; Kṛtānta; Mṛtyu; Vaivasvata; Yama
- Kālakeyas (clan of *daityas*), 763; four hundred killed by Rāvaṇa, 761
- Kālarātri, 583, 634; Sītā as, 511, 566
- Kālinī (mother of Sagara), 252
- Kālinī (river), 190, 398
- Kali Yuga, 37, 38, 821. *See also* Tīṣya Kalmāṣapāda. *See* Mitrasaha Saudāsa *kalpas*. *See* cosmic cycles *kalpasūtra*, 67
- Kāma, god of love (Anāṅga, Kandarpa, Madana, Manmatha), 80, 115–16, 274, 284, 300–301, 315, 319, 445, 459, 464–65, 470, 483, 496, 521, 676, 735–36, 753, 777, 804, 827, 835, *passim*; arrows of, pierce Rāvaṇa, 301, 315, 319, 328; history of ashram of, 76–77; Śiva burns, 76
- Kāmbhojas: northern quarter as location of country of, 404; produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 107
- Kampana (*rākṣasa*), 668; Aṅgada fights and kills, 647–48
- Kāmpilyā (capital city of Brahmadatta), 86
- Kāñcana (*purohita* of Śatrugṇa), 852
- Kandarpa. *See* Kāma
- Kaṇḍu (ascetic), advice of, 552; curses forest, 409; kills cow, 154; obeys father's commands, 154; son of, perishes in forest, 409
- Kārāpatha (region), 847
- Kardama Prajāpati: father of Ila, 833, 837; proposes *aśvamedha* dedicated to Śiva, 837
- Karṇaprāvaraṇas (name of a people), 399
- Kārtavīrya. *See* Arjuna Kārtavīrya
- Kārtika: month of, 380
- Kārtikeya/Kārttikeya. *See* Skanda
- Kāśī: Prataradana lord of, 787; Purūravas king of, 804
- Kāśyapa, 121, 134, 203, 251
- Kāśyapa, 154, 791
- Kāśyapa: Aditi wife of, 280, 744
- Kāśyapa: brahman seer, 64, 120, 203, 725, 728 (Kāśyapa), 821, 841
- Kāśyapa: Diti wife of, 98 (Kāśyapa), 280, 744. *See also* Mārīca Kāśyapa
- Kāśyapa: one of the Prajāpatis, 280, 744
- Kāśyapa: one of the seven seers, 728
- Kāśyapa: patronymic of R̥ṣyaśṛṅga, 62; performs Daśaratha's *aśvamedha*, 64
- Kāśyapa: Rāma Jāmadagnya gives earth to, 126–28
- Kāśyapa: son of, Vibhāṇḍaka, 61
- Kāśyapa: son of Mārīci, 121, 251. *See also* Mārīci Kāśyapa
- Kāśyapa: Vivasvant son of, 122, 251
- Kāśyapa (brahman seer), 837
- Kausalyā, 71, 76, 140, *passim*; asks to follow Rāma into exile, 23–24, 157–58; at death of Daśaratha, 201–2; blesses Rāma, 158–59; character synopsis of, 23–24; eats celestial porridge, 70; fasting of, 230; gives amulet to Rāma, 159; gives birth to Rāma, 71; goes to the forest with Bharata, 219; goes to Nandigrāma to meet Rāma, 721; grief of, 152–54, 157–59, 174–77, 188, 192, 195–96, 201–2, 209, 211–12, 223, 230, 242–44; ideal maternal figure, 23; implores Rāma to remain in Ayodhyā, 153–54; inner apartments of, 151; learns of Rāma's consecration, 135–36; meets Bharadvāja, 230; meets with Rāma on Mount Citrakūṭa, 243–44; mother of Rāma, 12, 23, 266,

Kausalyā (*continued*)

332, *passim*; participates in *aśvamedha*, 67;—in Daśaratha's funerary rites, 213; Rāma greets, upon return, 723;—informs, of his impending exile, 152;—reminds, of wifely duty, 24, 157–58; receives new brides, 128; relationship of, with Daśaratha, 23; reviles Bharata, 211;—Daśaratha, 195–96;—Kaikeyī, 202; sees Rāma's offerings for Daśaratha, 243; Sumantra consoles, 195; Sumitrā consoles, 177; supports Daśaratha, 175–76

Kauśambī: Kuśāmba founds, 84

Kauśika (patronymic of Viśvāmitra).

See Viśvāmitra

Kauśikī (river), 115, 398; rescued from

Pātāla, 494; sister of Viśvāmitra, 86

kavi (seer or poet), 39

kāvya (poetry), 4

Kāvya, Uśanas. See Uśanas Kāvya

Kerala, 400

Kesarin (monkey): adoptive father of Hanumān, 397, 428, 783; Añjanā wife of, 425, 783; Añjanā, Vāyu, and, try to restrain, 786; arrival of, in 397; kills Śambasādana, 487; troop leader, 541, 560, 590

Keśava: sleeping of, 383. See also Viṣṇu

Keśinī (mother of Asamañja), 91

Ketumatī (mother of Dhūmrākṣa), 734

Khara (brother of Rāvaṇa; *rākṣasa*), 32–33; dispatches fourteen *rākṣasas*, 286;—fourteen thousand *rākṣasas*, 289; doom of, presaged by omens, 289–91; Dūṣaṇa general of, 289; Rāma admonishes, 296; Rāma and, mock each other, 297–98; Rāma battles and destroys army of, 12, 287–88, 291–94;—Khara, 52, 56, 295–98;—Khara recalled, 300–301, 303, 307, 314, 321–23, 327, 329, 460–61, 480, 547, 564–65, 585, 627, 677, 692, 697, 700, 716;—told about activities of, 258; Rāvaṇa sends, to Daṇḍaka forest, with Dūṣaṇa, 763–64; Śūrpaṅkhā taunts, 288;—tells, of death of fourteen *rākṣasas*, 288;—tells, of disfigurement, 286;—tells Rāma about, 284

kimkaras: Hanumān battles, 499–500

kimpuruṣas (class of semi-divine beings), 835

kimpuruṣa women: Budha transforms Ilā's attendants into, 835

kinnaras, 313

kinnara women, 71, 143, 301; Budha transforms Ilā's attendants into, 835

Kirātas (name of a people), 399

Kīrti (goddess of fame), 69, 315, 734

Kiṣkindhā, 14, 20, 24, *passim*; arrival of monkeys in, 397–98; as cave, 53, 373, 378–81, 385, 390, 561; departure of Sugrīva with Lakṣmaṇa from, 395; description of, 390–91; Lakṣmaṇa enters, 388; moral and ethical tone of, 14; Rāma will not enter, 379–80; summoning of monkeys to, 393–95

Kiṣkindhākāṇḍa, 361–428; synopsis of, 13–14

Kosala: Ajātaśatru defeats *janapada* of, 36;

Ayodhyā capital of, 10; consecration of Kuśa in, 851–52; country of, 58

Krathana. See Skanda

Krauñca (forest): Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa encounter Kābandha in, 342

Krauñca (mountain): birds pass through, 738; inaccessible opening in, 405

krauñca(s) (bird): killing of, by Niṣāda, 54; third path in sky, that of, 419

Kṛṣṇa: as *avatāra* (incarnation) of Viṣṇu, 21, 35, 38, 40; Rāma as, 709, 710

Kṛtānta, 153. See also Dharmarāja; Mṛtyu; Vaivasvata; Yama

Kṛta Yuga, 21, 54, 729, 753–54, 808, 821, 826, 843; mountains had wings during, 433; sons of Diti powerful in, 97

Kṛśāśva's sons: divine weapons, 75; Indra tells Viśvāmita to bestow on Rāma, 79; take on form at will, 81; Viśvāmitra intones mantras for, 81

Kṛttikās (Pleiades): provide milk for Skanda, 90

kṣatriyadharmā (warrior code), 20

kshatriya(s), 11, 54, 84, *passim*: ascetics in Tretā Yuga, 821; born from the breast of Manu, 280; bow of, compared to kindling, 272; code of, inapropos to forest life, 272; come to be of equal power to brahmans in Kṛta and Tretā Yugas, 821; code of, 127; eating of five-clawed animals by, 370; extermination of, 127; Ikṣvāku as, 266; in list of four social classes, 40, 65, 219, 240, 280, 821, 842; power of brahmans greater than, 106, 108–9; Rāma asks Śambūka if he is, 822; Rāvaṇa oppresses, 752; role of, in the *yugas*, 821; Sitā's oath witnessed by, 842

Kubera Vaiśravaṇa: acquires Puṣpaka from Brahmā, 446; ashram of, 730–31; austerities of, 730–31, 748; becomes a lizard, 754; birth of, 730; Brahmā gives Puṣpaka to, 731;—grants boons to, 731;—makes world guardian, 731; curses Tumburu as Virādha, 266–67; curses Tumburu to become Virādha because of Rambhā, 267; Devavarīṇī mother of, 730; dwelling of, 468;—built by

- Viśvakarman, 405;—in Lañkā, 437, 731;—on Mt. Kailāsa, 405; evacuates Lañkā, 745; founds Lañkā, 731; friendship of, with Śiva, 748; genealogy of, 729–31; grants boon to Hanumān, 786; —to lizard, 755; half-brother of Rāvaṇa, 29, 74, 318–19, 329, 341, 637, 674, 700, 742, 744, 747, 754, 767, 789; heavenly forest of, 227; history and etymology of epithet Ekākṣipiṅgala, 748; king of *yakṣas*, 405; left eye of burned by gazing at Pārvatī, 748; mount of, elephant Sārvabhauma, 405; pleases Śiva, 748; Puṣpaka belongs to, 731, 742; Rāvaṇa fights and defeats, and *yakṣas*, 29, 299, 749–51;—recalled, 545;—conquers, 299, 446, 545, 749–51;—envious of, 29; —seizes Puṣpaka of, 318, 751; Rāvaṇa's enmity with, 29, 742, 744–51; son of Viśravas, 730; Viśravas tells, to found a city on Kailāsa, 745; as world guardian, 545, 731
- kulīṅgas*: first path in sky, that of, 419
- Kumāra. *See* Skanda
- Kumbha (son of Kumbhakarṇa), 604, 647, 668; fights Aṅgada and Dvivida, 648; Sugriva fights and kills, 649–50;—recalled, 751
- Kumbhakarṇa (brother of Rāvaṇa): agrees to attack Rāma and the monkeys, 617; Aṅgada claims, is scarecrow, 621; army of, fights army of monkeys, 620–27; assaults gods, 771; austerities of, 742; birth of, 28–29, 741; Brahmā curses, to perpetual sleep, 609–10, 614;—orders Sarasvatī to take over speech of, 31, 743–44;—tricks under pretext of boon, 743–44; brother of Rāvaṇa, 15; cannibalism of, 743; captures and releases Sugriva, 625–26; cave of, as dwelling, 610; characters synopsis of, 31; comically grotesque figure, 5; craves flesh, 626; decimates monkey army, 624; devours allies, 626; —monkeys, 624;—seven *apsarases*, 743; —thousands of beings, 613; discourse of, on statecraft (*nītiśāstra*) to Rāvaṇa, 31, 615–16, 619; drenches earth with flesh, 624; driven by fate, 621; dwelling of, sleeping chamber, 610, 747; episode of, 610–28; feats of, 613–14; fights and dazes Hanumān, 623–34; Gavākṣa fights, 623; gods remind Brahmā of crimes of, 743;—stop Brahmā from granting boon to, 743; hunting of, 627; inauspicious omens follow, 621; intoxication of, 613–14; Kaikasī mother of, 741; Kumbha and Nikumbha sons of, 647; Mahodara rebukes, 617–19; monkeys terrified of, 613, 621–22; Rāma fights and kills, 626–28; Rāvaṇa orders awakening of, 610; sleep of, 31, 610, 744, 747; Sugriva tears off ears and nose of, 625–26; Vajrajvālā wife of, 746–47; Viśravas father of, 28–29; waking of, 610–11; Yūpākṣa informs, of siege of Lañkā, 612
- Kumbhīnāsī (1): daughter of Sumālin, 734
- Kumbhīnāsī (2): Analā mother of, 765, 808; Madhu abducts, 764–65; wife of Madhu, 545, 765, 808; Viśvāvasu father of, 808
- Kuñjara (mountain): Viśvakarman builds palace for Agastya on, 401
- Kurus: northern quarter location of country of, 404; vedic clan and region of, associated with *Mahābhārata*, 35, 36, 227, 233, 404, 406
- Kuśa (companion of Rāma), 791
- Kuśa (son of Brahmā/Prajāpati): attains Brahmāloka, 86; father of Kuśānābha, 103; founder of Kauśāmbī, 84; Viśvāmitra descendant of, 86
- Kuśa (son of Rāma), 6, 17, 18–19; consecration of, in Kosala, 851–52; lives with mother (Sītā) in exile, 6; Rāma founds Kuśāvati for, 852;—recognizes as son 10, 842; recites *Rāmāyaṇa*, 6, 10, 17, 19, 57–58, 839–41; Sītā gives birth to, 17, 813; Vālmiki gives amulet to, 813;—names, 813; wears barkcloth garments, 840. *See also* disciple(s): of Vālmiki
- kuśa* (type of grass), 98, 101, 137, *passim*;
- Vālmiki creates amulet for Kuśa from, 813
- Kuśadhvajā (father of Vedavati), 752
- Kuśadvajā (brother of Janaka), 121
- Kuśāmba (son of Kuśa): founds Kauśāmbī, 84
- Kuśānābha, 84–87; father of Gādhi, 86, 104; founds Mahodaya, 84; hundred daughters of, 84–86; son of Kuśa, 84, 103–4
- Kuśāvati: Rāma founds, for Kuśa, 852
- kūṭaśālmālī* tree, 399. *See also* *śālmālī*
- Lake Mānasa. *See* Mānasa
- Lake Pampā. *See* Pampā
- Lakṣmaṇa, *passim*; accepts advice of Tārā, 393; accompanies Rāma into exile, 11, 52, 174–723;—on journey with Viśvāmitra, 9, 75–129; Agastya tells Rāma and, to go to Pañcavati, 279; alarm of Sugriva at anger of, 389; Aṅgada as mount of, 541; anger of, at exile of Rāma, 11, 151;—toward Bharata, 266;—toward Sugriva, 387–90, 392; announces arrival of Durvāsas, 850; appoints Vibhiṣaṇa as king of the *rākṣasas*, 552; apologizes to Sugriva, 393; arrives at Lake Pampā, 351; ascetics show hospitality to Rāma and, 264–65; asks and is

Lakṣmaṇa (*continued*)

denied permission to exterminate *rākṣasas*, 655; asks to use weapon-spell of Brahmā, 655; assigned to breach Laṅkā's northern gate, 574; begs permission to fight Rāvaṇa, 605;—of Rāma to take him to forest, 164–65; beheads Rāvaṇa's charioteer, 685–86; bids farewell to his mother, 172; birth of, 71; breaks Virādha's left arm, 266; brings wood for Jaṭāyus' cremation, 342; builds a pyre for fire ordeal of Sitā, 708;—hut for Rāma and Sitā in Pañcavaṭī, 282; challenges Indrajit, 664; chides Rāma for fainthearted speech, 266, 689; childhood of, 72; claims the weak and cowardly submit to fate, 156; co-*avatāra* with brothers, 4, 10, 22, 70–71, 608; conciliates Sugrīva, 393; consecrates Vibhiṣaṇa as king of Laṅkā, 702–3; consoles Rāma, 335, 338–40, 381–82, 386, 658–60, 800; cremates Kabandha, 345; criticizes Kaikeyī, 283; cuts off Kabandha's left arm, 343; cuts Rāvaṇa's javelin to pieces, 686; dejection of, 799; delivers critique of *dharma* (righteousness), 658–60; departs from Kiṣkindhā with Sugrīva, 395; describes ascetic life of Bharata, 283;—winter season, 282–83; descriptions of, 22, 354, 561; desolate, 153, 155, 799; on destiny, 339; devotion of, to Rāma, 72, 355; diverts Śūrpaṅkhā to Rāma, 285; dons the clothing of an ascetic, 170; dwells apart from Rāma for a year in Aṅgadiya, 847; embraces fainting Rāma, 658; emotional foil to Rāma, 11, 22; enters abode of Sugrīva, 391;—Daṇḍaka forest with Rāma, 12, 263–64;—heaven in earthly body, 851;—yogic trance, 851; exhortation of, 381, 386–87; fights Rāvaṇa, 607–8; fights and kills Atikāya, 638–40;—Indrajit, 665–71;—Virūpākṣa (son of Rāvaṇa), 581; finds Rāma in forest, 331; fourth part of Viṣṇu, 851 (*see also* Lakṣmaṇa: co-*avatāra*); Garuḍa heals wounds of Rāma and, 592; gives away his wealth, 166;—*gajapuṣpi* to Sugrīva, 364–65; gods grant boon to, 817; grief of, 313, 482, 491, 497, 658, 765–96, 799–800; guards door for Rāma, 848;—Sitā, 312; Hanumān able to lift, 608;—introduces Rāma and, to Sugrīva, 356; hears of Durvāsas' prophecies from Sumantra, 799;—recitation of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 58;—tales of Nrga, Nimi and Yayāti from Rāma, 800–807; holds regalia for Rāma's planned consecration, 148; ideal younger brother, 5, 22; Indrajit binds Rāma and,

with serpent weapons, 24, 32, 584–85; Indrajit reports death of Rāma and, 586; joins Rāma in battling Rāvaṇa, 685–86; Kabandha freed from curse by;—learns of Rāghavas' identities from, 344;—relates history to Rāma and, 344;—seizes Rāma and, 343; Kaikeyī orders, to wear bark-cloth garments, 170–71; kills Indrajit, 670–71;—Mahāpārśva, 715; learns of Rāma's planned consecration as prince regent, 135–36; leaves Ayodhyā with Rāma, 173;—Sitā unprotected, 13, 314, 331; lives with Rāma in cave during rainy season, 380–81; marries Ūrmilā, 123–25; monkeys announce arrival of, 388;—and, interrupt Indrajit's sacrifice, 662–63; mutilates Śūrpaṅkhā, 12, 285–86; on nature of women, 314; only human ally of Rāma, 24; opposes Rāma's exile, 153; paired constantly with Rāma, 10, 72; pierces Kumbhakarṇa with arrows, 626; Rāma and, encounter Virādha, 265–67;—break Virādha's arms, 266;—meet Jaṭāyus, 279–81;—meet Sugrīva, 391;—rescue Sitā, 267;—tease Śūrpaṅkhā, 285; Rāma banishes, 19, 851–52;—calms, 387–88;—confides in, 187–88;—could never find brother or companion like, 589;—directs, to find Sugrīva, 350;—dwells with, in Pañcavaṭī, 12, 281–84;—goes to Pañcavaṭī with;—279;—grieves for (*see* Lakṣmaṇa: Rāma laments for);—informs, of intention to abandon Sitā, 792–94;—instructs, to arrange *śvamedha*, 837–38;—laments for, 22, 589–90, 688;—lectures, on righteousness, 154;—offers to share sovereignty with, 136;—orders banishment of, 850;—orders, to abandon Sitā, 794–97;—orders, to guard door, 848;—prevents, from exterminating all *rākṣasas*;—rebukes, 331–33;—sends, into hiding with Sitā, 291;—sends, to warn Sugrīva, 386–87;—tells, to call off the consecration, 155;—and, visit Agastya, 52, 276–79;—and, visit Agastya's brother, 52, 275–76; Rāvaṇa pierces with Brahmā's javelin, 608;—strikes down, with javelin, 686–87;—unable to lift, 608; reaches Pampā, 348; recalls he is inconceivable portion of Viṣṇu, 608; recommends *rājasūya* to Rāma 830; reconciliation of, with Sugrīva, 393; refusal of, to gaze on Sitā, 21; rejects Śūrpaṅkhā, 285; rejoins battle between Rāma and Kumbhakarṇa, 626; relationship of, with Rāma, 72, 493–94, 589; reports to Rāma on abandonment of Sitā,

- 800; resists Sītā's request to follow Rāma, 313–14; reviles Daśaratha, 153;—Sugrīva, 391–92; rides on Aṅgada, 540; Śabari welcomes Rāma and, 348; sacrifices life for Rāma and family, 22, 40; saves Vibhīṣaṇa, 686; second life breath of Rāma, 2, 22, 72, 136, 561; sees inauspicious omens, 314; senses Rāma's intentions, 708; sets out for battle with Indrajit, 662;—for Mount Rśyamūka, 352; shoots arrows at Rāvaṇa, 683; shreds Rāvaṇa's battle standard, 685; Sītā accuses, of treachery, 13, 313–14;—laments for Rāma and, 587–88;—left alone in ashram by, 314;—left alone in ashram by recalled, 356;—rebuked by, 314;—requests, to rescue Rāma, 313;—sees Rāma and, wounded, 587;—sends, to rescue Rāma, 313; son Aṅgada consecrated in Aṅgadiya, 847; son Candraketu consecrated in Candrakāntā, 847; son of Daśaratha and Sumitrā, 122; and Sugrīva accept advice of Vibhīṣaṇa, 553; Sumantra consoles, 799; Sumitrā instructs, on conduct, 173;—urges submission to Rāma, 172–73; Śūrpanakha describes, to Rāvaṇa, 301; Suṣeṇa frees, with healing herbs, 27, 688; suspects golden deer is a *rākṣasa*, 311; Sutikṣṇa directs Rāma and, to visit ashrams of Agastya and Agastya's brother, 275; tells Rāma exemplary story of Indra, 830–33; terror of Aṅgada at arrival of, 388–89; threatens to slay Bharata and Kaikeyī, 234–35; twin brother of Śatrughna, 71; urges Rāma to defy order of exile, 156—to kill Rāvaṇa, 688–89;—to proceed with consecration, 156; urges search for Sītā, 335; virtues of, extolled by Guha to Bharata, 221–22; visits Śarabhaṅga, 268;—Sutikṣṇa, 269–71, 274–75; vital glow of, 586, 589; vital points (vitals) of, pierced by Indrajit's arrows, 584–85; vows to accompany Rāma into exile, 153, 164–65;—to avert fate by manly action, 156;—to dethrone Daśaratha, 157; warns Rāma of arrival of Bharata's army, 234–36; wears barkcloth garments, 11, 482, 485
- Lakṣmī (goddess of wealth and fortune), 315, 445, 561, 568, 710, 843
- Lamba (mountain): Hanumān's leap to, 436–37, 439; Laṅka located on, 439.
- See also Ariṣṭa; Trikūṭa
- lament: of abducted women, 762–63; of Bharata for Daśaratha, 208, 213–14; of brahman for child, 820; of Daśaratha for Rāma, 52, 56, 144, 171, 173, 175–77, 194–95; dead person derives no benefit from, 378; of Hanumān for Sītā, 460; of Kausalyā for Daśaratha, 202, 211;—Rāma, 153–54, 176–77, 192; of Mandodari for Rāvaṇa, 33, 700–701, 716; of *rākṣasa* women for Rāvaṇa, 699–700; of Rāma for his exile, 187–88;—Jaṭāyus, 53, 56, 340–41;—Lakṣmaṇa, 89–90, 688;—Sītā, 13, 56, 334–36, 341, 351–52, 357, 385, 543–44; of Rāvaṇa for Indrajit, 672–73;—Kumbhakarna, 629;—*rākṣasas*, 677–78; of Sītā, 473–75, 477–78, 567, 587–88, 674;—over simulacra of Rāma's head and bow, 566–67; of Tārā for Valin, 56, 374–77, 379; true men do not, 629; of Vibhīṣaṇa for Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 591; of wives of Daśaratha, 213, 217;—the *rākṣasas*, 676–78;—the townsmen, 180–81;—Valin, 374–75
- lance(s) (*śūla*[s]), *passim*; history of Lavaṇa's, 808–9, 814; Lavaṇa fights Śatrughna with, 814–17; of Lavaṇa returns to Śiva (Rudra), 817; Rāma shatters Rāvaṇa's, with javelin of Indra, 691; Śiva grants, to Madhu as boon, 808, 811
- langur(s) (*Semnopithecus entellus*), 189, 280, 381, 396, 712; Gavākṣa as king of, 397; gods take birth as, 70–71; numbers of, 393, 559, 580, 583; *rṅṣas* identified as, 47
- Laṅkā, 4, 13, 15, *passim*; compared to a woman, 437–38, 440;—to Amarāvati, 319; description of, 319, 437–50, 539, 575–76, 734; Hanumān arrives at, 437, 439;—attacks and burns, 14, 27, 514–15, 540, 544, 782–83;—fights *rākṣasas* in, 782–83;—leaps to, 429–37, 782;—searches, 437, 439–59, 513, 782; impregnability of, 440, 474, 539, 734, *passim*; inauspicious omens in, 736–37; Kubera (Vaiśravaṇa) dwells in, 437, 731;—evacuates, 745;—on peak of Trikūṭa (=Lamba), 437, 439, 538, 575; monkeys burn, 645–46;—lay siege to 579–80; Nala and monkeys build bridge to, 554–55; number of *rākṣasas* in, 392; *rākṣasas* abandon, 731, 740, 744;—flee to, 737–38, 740;—live in, 731, 734–36, 738–740, 744–45; Rāma crosses bridge to, with army, 555;—positions monkey chiefs to attack, 577–78;—tells Vibhīṣaṇa to rule, 789; Rāvaṇa brings abducted women to, 763;—positions *rākṣasa* chiefs to defend, 572;—takes possession of, 744–46;—takes Sītā to, 328; Sītā predicts doom of, 474; Śūrpanakhā goes to, 298–99; Vibhīṣaṇa consecrated as de facto king of, 14, 702–3; Viśvakarman builds, 437, 731, 734

- Lava (son of Rāma), 6, 17, 18–19; consecration of, in Śrāvati, 851–52; lives with mother (Sitā) in exile, 6; Rāma founds Śrāvati for, 852;—recognizes as son 10, 842; recites *Rāmāyaṇa* with Kuṣa, 6, 10, 17, 19, 57–58, 839–41; Sitā gives birth to, 17, 813; Vālmiki gives amulet to, 813;—names, 813; wears barkcloth garments, 840. *See also* disciple(s): of Vālmiki
- Lavaṇa: arrow that kills, enters Rasātala, 817; cannibalism of, 814; Cyavana asks Rāma for protection from, 17–18, 808–9;—tells story of Māndhātṛ and, 814–15; disregards ancestors of Śatrughna and Rāma, 815; fights and kills Māndhātṛ, 814–15; history of, 808–9; lance of, 809, 811, 814–17; Madhu gives lance to, 809, 811; oppresses ascetics, 809; Rāma sends Śatrughna to kill, 17–18, 809–11; Śatrughna fights and kills, 17–18, 23, 32, 815–17; story of, 17–18, 809–17
- leaping: of Hanumān, 14, 53, 56, 429–37, 516–18, 547, 561, 706;—to mountain of healing herbs, 644–45, 688;—to sun, 426–27; of ocean, discussion of, by monkeys, 423–25;—from Mount Ariṣṭa by Hanumān, 516–18;—from Mount Mahendra by Hanumān, 429–37;—Vāyu assists in, 432;—preparation by Hanumān for, 427–28, 516–17; prowess of monkeys in, 424–25
- legacy of the *Rāmāyaṇa*, 41–43
- lifting of mountain by Rāvaṇa, 30, 752
- lineage: and adventures of Rāvaṇa, 74, 728–82; of Aṅgirasas, 786; of Bhṛguś, 786; of Daśaratha, 121–22; Heti founds, of *rākṣasas*, 732; of Ikṣvāku, Brahmā sires, 121, 251; of Janaka 122–23; of Jaṭāyus, 280–81; of Kubera, 729–31; of Paulastya, 74; of *rākṣasas*, 740–42; of royal epic dynasties. *See also* genealogy; Lunar Dynasty; Solar Dynasty; *vaṃśa(s)*; *vaṃśāvali(s)*
- liṅga: Rāvaṇa worships, 30, 776
- lives, previous. *See* birth(s): reaping consequences of previous; reincarnation
- lizard: eating of, by brahmins and kshatriyas, 370; Kubera becomes, 754;—grants boon to, 755; Nṛga cursed to become, 801–2
- Lohamukhas (name of a people), 399
- lord of Śaci. *See* Indra
- love in separation, 351–52, 382–83
- Lunar Dynasty (Candravamśa), 36
- Madana. *See* Kāma
- Mādhava. *See* Viṣṇu
- Mādhavi (earth goddess), 19, 843. *See also* Dharaṇī; Vasudhā
- mādhavi* (type of creeper), 352
- Madhu: and Kaiṭabha, 732, 759, 810, 817, 849; Viṣṇu as crusher of, 137;—killer of, 128, 709
- Madhu (*asura* or *dānava* lord): as ally of Rāvaṇa, 765–66; bestows lance on Lavaṇa, 808–9; carries off and marries Kumbhīnasī (2) 545,764–65; Cyavana tells story of, 808; father of Lavaṇa, 808, intent on righteousness, 808; receives lance from Rudra, 808, 811; Śatrughna consecrated in city of, 809–10
- madhu* (type of wine), 390. *See also* honey-wine
- Madhupurī (city of Madhu). *See* Madhurā
- Madhurā: Rāma sends messengers to, 852; Rāma sends Śatrughna back to, 18, 820; Śatrughna founds, as capital of the Śūrasenas, 18, 23, 817–18
- Madhusūdana. *See* Viṣṇu
- Madhuvana (honey-wine grove) (1): guarded by Dadhimukha, 526; Rkṣarajas prohibits entrance into, 528; southern search party destroys, 14, 525–32; Sugrīva protects, 526–31
- Madhuvana (honey-wine grove) (2): Lavaṇa kills Māndhātṛ in, 814–15; the region around Madhurā, 809, 814
- Magadha: Ajātaśatru king of, 36; region of, 84, 399
- Māgadhi (river), 84
- magic. *See* power(s) of illusion
- magical weapons. *See* weapon(s); weapon-spells
- Mahābharata*, 4, 21, 21n, 35–39; *adhyaḃyas* (chapters) of, 9n; comparison of *Rāmāyaṇa* with, 20; fraternal conflict as theme of, 26; “Great Tale of the Bhāratas,” 36; as history, 37; as *itihāsa*, 4; metrical style of, 8; number of casualties in war in, 39; relationship of, to *Bhagavadgītā*, 13, 35; in religious history of Hinduism, 40; sister epic of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 47; takes place in Dvāpara Yuga, 38; theme of, 20; as Vaiṣṇava work, 35
- Mahādeva. *See* Śiva
- Mahākāpāla (*rākṣasa* general): Rāma fights and kills, 291–93
- Mahāpadma (one of the elephants who support the earth), 92, 635, 776. *See also* Padma
- Mahāpārśva (minister of Rāvaṇa): Aṅgada fights and kills, 682–83; joins assault on the gods, 769; riddles Aṅgada, Jāmbavān, and Gavākṣa with arrows, 682; among

- ministers who kill and devour ministers of Arjuna Kārtavīrya, 777–78; wreaks havoc on Aṅgada's forces, 682
- Mahāpārśva (younger brother of Rāvaṇa): Ṛṣabha fights and kills, 635
- mahāprasthāna* (departure from the world): of Rāma recounted, 853–85
- Mahārāja (Great King), as title, 35
- Mahāsena. *See* Skanda
- mahāyuga* (great cosmic cycle), 37
- Mahendra (god). *See* Indra
- Mahendra (mountain), 542; Hanumān climbs and crushes, 427–30;—leaps from, 429–36; Hanumān's association with, 517; placed on southern shore by Agastya, 401; *vidyā-dharas* fly up from, 430
- Mahēśvara: sacrifices to, 395, 744, 754, 764; *See also* Śiva
- māheśvara* (sacrifice): of Indrajit (Meghanāda), 764; of Marutta, 744
- Mahodara (minister of Rāvaṇa): advises Kumbhakarṇa to seek Rāvaṇa's advice, 612; battles sons and grandsons of Varuṇa, 762; charges Aṅgada, 633; fights Sugrīva, 681–82; mounts the elephant Sudarśana, 630; Nīla kills, 634; one of Rāvaṇa's six ministers, 749, 776–78; proposes a ruse to induce Sītā to submit, 618–19; rebukes Kumbhakarṇa, 617–19
- Mahodaya (brahman): Viśvāmītra curses, 111
- Mahodaya (city), 111; Kuśanābha founds, 84
- Maināka (mountain) (1): addresses Hanumān, 433; barrier against *asuras*, 432; granted immunity by Indra, 434; Hanumān carries, 517; encounter of Hanumān with, 432–34; hidden beneath the ocean, 432; Indra grants immunity to, 434; resting place for Hanumān, 432–34; rises out of ocean, 432; Vāyu saves, 433
- Maināka (mountain) (2): home of the horse-faced women, 405; lies beyond Mount Krauṇa, 405, palace of Maya located on, 405
- Mainda (monkey troop leader), 380, 390, 440, *passim*; arrives in Kiṣkindhā, 397; boon of, from Brahmā, 525; cut down in battle, 565; declares prowess in jumping, 424; drinks nectar of immortality, 525, 560; fights and kills Vajramuṣṭi, 581–82; in southern search party, 400, 411; invulnerability of, 525; Kaikeyī embraces, 722; knows good and bad policy, 550; number of troops of, 397; participates in Sugrīva's consecration, 380; Rāma gives gifts to, 742; son of the Aśvins, 397, 525, 564; takes picket duty, 543. *See also* Dvividā
- maireya* wine. *See* wine: *maireya*
- Maithili. *See* Sītā
- Makarākṣa (son of Khara): inauspicious omens of, 651; Rāma fights and kills, 652–53; Rāvaṇa orders to command army, 651; reviles Rāma as killer of Khara, 652
- Malaya (mountain[s]) (1): Agastya seated on, 401, Hanumān announces Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa to Sugrīva on, 356;—swears by, 489, 496; monkey army marches through, 542; southern mountain of spices, 227, Vālin fights and kills Dundubhi in cave of, 408
- Malaya (mountain[s]) (2): Hanumān tears off summit of, 625;—sees, on approach to Laṅkā, 436; of Laṅkā, 496, 536
- Mālin (great uncle of Rāvaṇa): account of, 734–39; austerities of, 733; battles gods, 738–49; boons of, 733, 735–36; bows of, 738; Devavatī mother of, 733; fights Garuḍa, 738–39; sons of, become ministers of Vibhiṣana, 734; strikes Garuḍa with mace, 738; Viṣṇu fights and kills, 738–39. *See also* Mālyavān; Sukeśa: sons of, attack the world of the gods; Sumālin
- Malla: Rāma founds Candrakāntā in, 847
- Mālyavān (great uncle of Rāvaṇa), 765; account of, 734–39; as Analā daughter of, 734; as Analā, granddaughter of, 765; austerities of, 733; battles gods, 739–40; boons of, 733, 735–36; chides Viṣṇu, 739; Devavatī mother of, 733; discourse on statecraft of, 570–71; eldest son of Sukeśa, 735; flees to Laṅkā, 739; foretells destructions of *rākṣasas*, 570–72; Garuḍa drives off, 740; husband of Sundarī, 734; lectures Rāvaṇa. 571; paternal uncle of Rāvaṇa's mother, 570; Rāvaṇa accuses, of treachery and humiliates him, 572; strikes Viṣṇu with lance, 740; urges Rāvaṇa to make peace with Rāma, 570–72; Viṣṇu pierces, with javelin, 740. *See also* Mālin; Sukeśa: sons of, attack the world of the gods; Sumālin
- Mālyavān (mountain): meeting of Sugrīva on, with Rāma, 395–96; Rāma lives on, 382. *See also* Prasaravaṇa
- Mānasa (lake): Brahmā creates, 77; etymology of name of, 77; flooding of, 747; *hamsas* yearn to live on, 382; and Saramā, 747
- Mānasa (mountain), 405
- Māṇḍakarṇi (ascetic): asceticism of, 274; creates Pañcāpsaras, 274
- Mandākini (river), 269; description of, 233–34. *See also* Ganges

- Mandara (mountain), 193, 318, 388, *passim*;  
gods and demons churn, 97–99, 469, 620;  
Hanumān swears by, 489; monkeys summoned  
from, 394; Śālakaṭaṅkaṭā gives  
birth on, 732; twin peaks of, 449; Viśva-  
karman grants Nala's mother boon on, 554
- Māṇḍavī: marriage of, to Bharata, 125
- Mandehās (name of a clan of *rākṣasas*), 399
- Māndhātṛ (ancestor of Rāma), 122, 252; Indra  
and gods fear, 814; Lavaṇa fights and kills,  
814–15; punishes mendicant, 371
- Mandodari (wife of Rāvaṇa), 33; diverts  
Rāvaṇa, 521; gives birth to Meghanāda  
Indrajit, 747; Hanumān mistakes, for  
Sītā, 450; Hemā mother of, 746; laments  
Rāvaṇa, 33, 700–701, 716; marriage of,  
to Rāvaṇa, 746; Moya father of, 746
- Māñibhadra/Māñicara (*yakṣa*): strikes down  
Dhūmrākṣa in battle, 750
- manly effort, 156, 494, 659, 706 (action).  
*See also* human effort
- Manmatha. *See* Kāma
- Mantharā (daughter of Virocana): Indra  
kills, 79
- Mantharā (maidservant of Kaikeyī), 23, 41,  
214, *passim*: incites Kaikeyī, 11–12, 24,  
138–43; instigates Rāma's exile, 138–42;  
Śatrugṇa assaults, 23, 215
- Mantrapāla (minister of Daśaratha), 60
- Manu: builder of Āyodhyā, 58; Ikṣvāku  
son of, 802, 826–27; son of Vivasvat  
(Vaivasvata), 121, 251
- manuscript(s): evidence from, as basis for  
emendations, 5n; materials of, 8; of  
northern recension, 9n; of *Rāmāyaṇa*,  
7–8; *sargas* in, 45; tradition of in India,  
6; perishability of, 8
- Mārīca (*rākṣasa* minister of Rāvaṇa): 56;  
abandons golden deer form at death,  
312–13; admonishes Rāvaṇa, 304; agrees  
to command of Rāvaṇa, 309; attempts to  
dissuade Rāvaṇa, 52, 304–7; becomes a  
golden deer, 13, 32, 309–313;—recalled  
720; captivates Sītā, 13; character of,  
32; cries out for help in Rāma's voice,  
13, 313; description of, as golden deer,  
309–10; fasting of, 303; fears Rāma,  
307; feasts on flesh of seers, 305; fights  
*yakṣas*, 749–50; flees battle, 750–51;  
flies to Rāma's ashram with Rāvaṇa,  
309; foretells destruction of Rāvaṇa and  
*rākṣasas*, 306, 309; Lakṣmaṇa suspects  
true identity of, deer as, 311; lures Rāma  
off, 13, 32, 52, 309–10, 312; obstructs  
Viśvāmītra's sacrifice with Subāhu, 10,  
73–74, 82–83, 306; one of Rāvaṇa's six  
ministers, 744, 749, 751, 769, 776–78;  
power of illusion of, 325–26; praises  
Rāma, 304; Rāma kills, 13, 32, 56,  
312–13;—kills recalled, 627, 697, 717,  
720;—pursues 13, 312;—stuns, 10, 83,  
306;—vows to capture, for Sītā, 311–12;  
Rāvaṇa admonishes, 307–8;—asks, for  
aid, 13, 52, 303;—orders, to become  
golden deer, 303–4, 308;—orders, to  
obstruct sacrifices, 74;—rejects counsel  
of, 307–8;—recounts previous encounter  
with Rāma, 305–7;—tells, of killing of  
Khara, Dūṣaṇa, and Trīśīras, 303;—tells,  
plan to abduct Sītā, 303–4;—threatens,  
308;—visits, 303; recalls past encounters  
with Rāma, 305–7; roams Daṇḍaka forest,  
30; Saṃyodhakaṅṭaka fells, 749; son of  
Tātakā, 78; strikes fear into all the world,  
305; takes forms at will, 13, 330; Tātakā  
gives birth to, 78; transformed into  
*rākṣasa* by Agastya's curse, 78
- Mārīca Kāśyapa: husband of Diti 98, like  
Rāma, has every virtue of a son 132
- Marīci: ancestor of Rāma, 121–22; father  
of Kāśyapa, 121, 251, 280; one of the  
Prajāpatis, 280; son of Brahma, 121, 251
- Marīci: a city in the western quarter,  
402
- marīcīpas* (class of ascetics), 268, 302, 303
- marriage: Bhaga as lord of, 734; of Bharata  
to Māṇḍavī, 123–25; of Bhayā to Heti,  
732; of Devavarṇinī to Viśravas, 730; of  
Devavatī to Sukeśa, 733; fathers' concerns  
about daughters', 741, 746; of Kaikasī to  
Viśravas, 28; of Kaikasī, 741; of Kumbha-  
karṇa to Vajravālā, 746–47; of Kumbhī-  
nasī to Madhu by abduction, 764–65; of  
Lakṣmaṇa to Ūrmilā, 123–25; maidens  
without, as a liability, 785; of Mandodari  
to Rāvaṇa, 746; Narmadā (*gandharva*  
woman) gives daughters in, 734; of  
Pārvatī to Śiva, 88; of Pulastya with  
Tṛṇabindu's daughter, 730; of Rāma to  
Sītā, 11, 123–25;—recalled, 261; of  
Śatrugṇa to Śrutakīrti, 123–25; of Śiva  
to Umā, 88; of sons of Daśaratha to  
daughters and nieces of Janaka, 11; of  
Śūrpaṇakhā to Vidyujjihva, 746; Tṛṇa-  
bindu gives daughter to Pulastya in,  
730; Vedavatī's hand sought in, 753;  
of Vibhīṣaṇa to Saramā, 747
- Mārtāṇḍa. *See* Sūrya
- Māruta (god of wind): etymology of name  
of, 99; infatuation of, with Añjanā, 426;  
son of Aditi, 785. *See also* Vāyu
- Mārutas, 99
- Maruts, 76, 79, 95, 101, 133, 158, 248, 199,  
316, 385, 389, 403, 423, 455, 456, 481,

- 493, 506, 534, 699, 724, 768, 770, 771, 772, 842, 854; Diti gives birth to, 99; etymology of name of, 99
- Marutā: *aśvamedha* performed by, 837; mocks Rāvaṇa, 754; sacrifices to Śiva (Maheśvara), 744; Saṃvarta restrains from fighting Rāvaṇa, 754; sets out to battle Rāvaṇa, 754; story of, 754–55
- māṣas (class of ascetics), 302, 303
- Mātali (charioteer of Indra), 173; ascends with chariot to the sky, 702; brings Rāma Indra's chariots, 689;—Indra's javelin, 691; drives chariot for Indra, 770–72; drives Rāma into battle, 694; Gomukha son of, 770; Indra dismisses, 772; Rāma pays homage to, 702; Rāvaṇa riddles with arrows, 690; reminds Rāma that he must use Brahmā's divine weapon, 698; unfazed by arrow wounds, 697
- Mataṅga (sage): ashram of, 41, 363;—on Rṣyamūka, 408;—blood drops fall on hermitage of, 363; curses Vālin, 363, 408; forest of, 348; Kabandha tells Rāma of, 347; Pampā as residence of students of, 347; pond of, 349
- Mataṅgi: daughter of Krodhavaśā, mother of the elephants, 280
- Mātariśvan. *See* Vāyu
- Mathurā. *See* Madhurā
- maxims. *See* proverbs
- Māyā: immemorial consort of Rāma, 854
- Maya (*asura* or *dānava*): architect of *dānavas*, 412; asceticism of, 746; boon to, from 412; Brahmā gives wealth of, to Hemā, 412; cave of, 418; creates forest and mansion of Hemā, 412; forges javelin of Rāvaṇa, 686; gives Mandodarī to Rāvaṇa in marriage, 545, 746; gives infallible javelin to Rāvaṇa, 746; Hemā wife of, 746; Hemā's relationship with, 412; Indra kills, 412; javelin of, gained through austerities, 746;—strikes down Lakṣmaṇa, 746; lord of *daityas*, 746; Māyavin and Dundubhi sons of, 746; mountain stronghold of, 414; palace of, located on Maināka, 405; powers of illusion of, 327; unaware of Viśravas's curse, 746
- Māyāvin (1): son of Maya, 746
- Māyāvin (2): son of Dundubhi, 360; Vālin fights, kills, in cave, 360–61
- mead, 451
- meat: Bharadvāja provides to Bharata's army, 228–29; fit for sacrifice, 187, 812–13; Vasiṣṭha demands illusory, 812; in Rāvaṇa's drinking hall, 451; Kumbha-karṇa eats, 610–11; Niṣādas offer, to Bharata, 220; *rākṣasa* in the form of Vasiṣṭha demands, 812; *rākṣasa* women want to eat Sītā's organs, 472;—addicted to, 462; Rāma eats, 791;—and Lakṣmaṇa eat, 187;—gives up, 152, 489;—takes, 313;—tells Guha that he subsists on fruits and roots, 182; Rāma, Sītā and Lakṣmaṇa eat, 187; Sampātī and his son seek, 372; vultures, seek, 420. *See also* cannibalism; flesh-eating
- medicinal herbs. *See* healing herbs
- Meghanāda (birth name of Indrajit), 747. *See also* Indrajit
- Meghnad Badh Kavya, “The Killing of Meghanāda,” 32
- Menā (daughter of Meru): daughter of Meru, 87; mother of Ganges and Pārvatī, 87; wife of Himalaya, 87
- Menakā (*apsaras*): infatuates Viśvāmītra, 115
- medicants. *See* ascetic(s)
- Meru (mountain), 133, 147, 173, *passim*; ashram of Tṛṇabindu on slopes of, 729; deities resort to, 40; divine beings come to in evening, 403; Garuḍa heads toward, 644; Hanumān brags he can fly around one thousand times, 427; Hanumān swears by, 489; Menā daughter of, 87; monkeys are to search, 402; sons of Sukeśa perform austerities on, 733
- Merusāvārṇi (sage): asceticism of, 403; Svayaṃprabhā daughter of, 412
- metaphor, extended (*samastavasturūpaka*), 214, 288, 441, 601–2, 650, 683 776; of *aśokavana* as ravaged woman, 456–57; of battle as an ocean, 595; of battlefield as a river, 601–2, 771; of grief as an ocean, 214, 288; of Laṅkā as a woman, 437–38; of Narmadā as a woman, 776; of Rāvaṇa as a storm cloud, 448; Rāma, as refuge of the grief-stricken, 359
- meter(s): *anuṣṭubh* type of, 8; of *Mahābhārata*, 8–9; of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 8–9; *śloka* type of, 8, 55
- minister(s): of Arjuna Kārtavīrya, 775, 777–78; of Daśaratha, 60, 63, 64, 203–4, 724; Hanumān as, of Sugrīva, 27; of Rāma, 800, 820–21, 853;—consulted, 850–51; of Rāvaṇa 744, 749, 751, 752, 758, 761, 765, 769, 776, 778, 781–82;—bathe in Narmadā, 776;—eat ministers of Arjuna Kārtavīrya, 778;—Hanumān fights and kills sons of, 501–2; of Romapāda, 61–62; Tāra as, of Vālin, 731; of Vibhiṣaṇa, 573
- Miśrakeśa (*gandharva* woman), 227
- Mithi: etymology of, 805. *See also* Janaka

- Mithilā (city): besieged by angry kings, 118; Janaka returns to, 125; kings assemble in, 118; lord of (*see* Janaka); Rāma accompanies Viśvāmitra to, 10–11, 100, 102; Sudhanvan lays siege to, 123; Yudhājit arrives in, 124
- Mitra: curses Urvaśī to marry Purūravas, 804; story of Urvaśī and, and Varuṇa, 803–4; Vasiṣṭha enters semen of, and Varuṇa, 803
- Mitrasaha Saudāsa (Kalmāṣapāda): boon of, 813; kills one of two *rākṣasas*, 812; sacrifice of, 812; Vālmiki tells story of, 812–13; Vasiṣṭha curses, to eat human flesh, 813;—*purohita* of, 812–13
- Mlecchas: northern quarter is country of, 404; produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 107
- monkey army: Akampana battles, 597; Aṅgada exhorts, 410, 423–24; Aṅgada exhorts, to fast to death, 414; assails Dadhimukha, 526–28; attacks Kumbhakarṇa, 623; attacks *rākṣasas* fleeing fire, 646; attempts to revive Rāma, 658; battles Akampana’s forces, 601; battles *rākṣasas*’ army, 580–81, 582–83, 595, 597, 647, 651–52, 657, 662, 668, 675, 679–80; bites and claws Kumbhakarṇa, 623–24; burns Laṅkā, 645–46; cheers Hanumān’s return with herbs, 645; crosses the ocean on bridge, 555; despair of, at prospect of crossing the ocean, 543; flees 656–57; flees at sight of Kumbhakarṇa, 613, 621–23; flees in dejection at apparent killing of Sitā, 556; flees in fear of Atikāya, 635–36;—of Makarākṣa, 652;—of Narāntaka, 632;—of Rāvaṇa, 683;—of Vibhiṣaṇa, 590–91; flees to Rāma for refuge from Kumbhakarṇa, 624, 626–27; flighty nature of, 450, 490, 515, 722; healed by herbs, 645; Jāmbavān rallies fleeing, 591; lays siege to Laṅkā, 577–79; leaders of, debate Vibhiṣaṇa’s intentions, 549–51;—showered with gifts, 726; marches toward south, 540–42; mourns Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 585; Nala and, build bridge to Laṅkā, 15, 554–55; night battle between *rākṣasa* army and, 582–83; placement of, 573; plans to rescue Sitā, 525–26; protects Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 586–87; Rāma dispatches, to find Indrajit, 584;—meets with leaders of, on Mount Suvēla, 574–76;—positions leaders of, to attack, 577–78; Rāvaṇa scorches, with Tāmasa weapon-spell, 683; rejoices at death of Indrajit, 671; rejoices at revival of Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 593; reports on Sitā’s condition, 531–32; routs remaining *rākṣasas*, 699; scales the walls of Laṅkā, 580; seeks refuge with Rāma, 605; sets fire to Laṅkā, 645–46; slain warriors of, restored to life, 713; Sugriva assembles, 385; Sugriva commander of, 398; surveys Laṅkā from Suvēla, 575; unable to extract javelin from Lakṣmaṇa, 687; Vibhiṣaṇa rallies, 586, 590; weapons of, 525
- monkeys: announce arrival of Lakṣmaṇa, 388; arrive at Madhuvana, 526; assemble in Kiṣkindhā, 393, 397–98; behavior of, 450, 518; birth of, 70–71, 854; board the Puṣpaka flying palace, 715; bring water for consecration, 725; as comic figures, 24; Dadhimukha tries to restrain, 526; delighted at Hanumān’s return, 518; devastate Madhuvana, 525–28; in dreams as inauspicious omens, 481, 483; drink honey-wine, 526–28; drunken behavior of, 526–27; eating of prohibited, 370; except Hanumān, accompany Rāma to heaven, 852–53; failure of search, for Sitā of, 408–409; fasting to death of, 416, 417, 418, 454; fear Rāma, 373; gods take birth as, 70–71; grief of, 379, 428, 454, 486, 789; Hanumān encourages, to drink honey-wine, 527; invade the Madhuvana with permission of Aṅgada and senior, 526; number of, 385, 393, 580; praise Hanumān, 518; return to divine source, 855; return to Prasavaṇa, 408; revile Dadhimukha, 526–27; search for Sitā, 408–23; seek protection of Vāli, 377; of southern search party, 411; Sugriva dispatches, to search for Sitā, 13, 402–7;—orders Nila to muster, 13, 385;—orders Hanumān to summon, 394;—summons, to Kiṣkindhā, 394–95; summoned to *aśvamedha*, 838; Suṣeṇa as physician of, 27; Svayamprabhā questions, 412; take on forms at will, 373, 560, 788, 852, 853; Tārā as protector of, 375; translation of words for, 46; vedic gods incarnate as, 10; void honey wine as urine, 529–30; wish to attend Rāma’s consecration, 715; with Sugriva at Pampā and R̥ṣyamūka, 345, 346, 347, 349; witness Sitā’s abduction, 326–27
- monkey women: grief of, 368, 454
- morning rites, 284
- mountain(s): Candra and Droṇa in the sea of milk, 592; fear Indra, 431; gods terrified of, 433; had wings in R̥ta Yuga, 433; Indra severed wings of, 433; lifting of, by Rāvaṇa, 30, 752; of healing herbs (*see* healing herbs: mountain of)
- Mount Añjana. *See* Añjana
- Mount Aruṇa. *See* Aruṇa

- Mount Citrakūṭa. *See* Citrakūṭa  
Mount Dardara. *See* Dardara  
Mount Dhūmra. *See* Dhūmra  
Mount Himalaya. *See* Himalayas  
Mount Kailāsa. *See* Kailāsa  
Mount Mahendra. *See* Mahendra  
Mount Mālyavān (Prasravaṇa). *See* Mālyavān;  
Prasravaṇa  
Mount Mandara. *See* Mandara  
Mount Meru. *See* Meru  
Mount Prasravaṇa. *See* Mālyavān; Prasravaṇa  
Mount Prasravaṇa. *See* Prasravaṇa  
Mount Ṛṣyamūka. *See* Ṛṣyamūka  
Mount Suvēla. *See* Suvēla  
Mount Vindhya. *See* Vindhya  
Mṛtyu (god of death), 246, 298, 318, *passim*;  
accompanies Yama in battle against Rāvaṇa, 759–60; asks to kill Rāvaṇa, 759; cannot be withstood, 338; destroys entire triple world, 759; noose of, 285, 290, 293, 297, 737; war hammer of, 759; Rāvaṇa fights, 759–60; vows to kill *asuras*, 759. *See also* Dharmarāja; Kāla; Kṛtānta; Vaivasvata; Yama  
Nahuṣa, 200, 252; father of Yayāti, 122, 136, 805–86; Rāma equal to, 218; son of Ambariṣa, 122, 252, 339  
Naimiṣa forest, 838  
Nala (architect of the monkeys), 15, 27, 390, 540, 560, 564, 576, 580, 587, 597, 614, 683, 787–88; Aṅgada exhorts to return to battle, 621; arrival of, in Kiṣkindhā, 365; arrows of Indrajit strike and fells, 642–43; charges Rāvaṇa, 605; equal in skill to his father, 554; fights Pratapana, 581; and monkeys build bridge, 15, 27, 53, 56, 554–55;—recalled, 716–17, 721; number of troops of, 397, 558–60; participates in Sugriva's consecration, 380; Rāma has, build bridge, 53; son of Viśvakarman, 554; takes counsel with other monkeys, 573; Viśvakarman grants boon to, 554  
Nalakūbara (son of Kubera): confirms Ramabhā's story, 767; curses Rāvaṇa, 767–68  
Nandana (divine weapon-spell) of the *vidyā-dharas*, 80  
Nandana (minister of Daśaratha), 204  
Nandana garden (Indra's garden), 228–29, 236, 299, 311, 347, 384, 458, 478, 498, 526, 575, 742–43, 747, 772, 790; Kubera revived in, 751; Rāvaṇa destroys, 748–49  
Nandi(n). *See* Nandiśvara  
Nandiḡrāma: Bharata lives in, 52, 54, 56, 257–58, 721, 809; Hanumān reaches, 718  
Nandiśvara, 283; curses Rāvaṇa, 16, 24, 751–5; orders Puṣpaka turned back, 752  
Nārada (divine seer): alerts Nṛga to danger facing him, 801; entertains Bharata, 228; goes to heaven with Vaivasvata, 760; Kausalyā invokes, 158; narrates history of Rāma to Vālmiki, 9–10, 18, 38–39, 51–55; praises Rāvaṇa's valor in battle, 756; returns to heaven with Viavasvata, 760; warns Rāvaṇa about following Yama's path, 756–57; warns Yama of Rāvaṇa's intentions, 757–58  
Nārada (king of *gandharvas*), 228  
Nārada (minister of Daśaratha): describes practices of social classes in *yugas*, 821–22; explains untimely death of child, 18, 821, reasons that a *śūdra* is practicing asceticism in Rāma's realm, 821–22  
Naraka (*dānava*): lives in Prāgjyotiṣa, 403; son of Kālakā, 280; Viṣṇu kills, 629, 759, 768  
Narāntaka (rākṣasa troop leader), 601, 604; Aṅgada fights and kills, 632–33; death of, recalled, 635, 668, 715; flesh marks path of, 632; knocks Aṅgada unconscious, 633; Kumbhakarṇa paternal uncle of, 628; leads *rākṣasas* into battle, 629–30, 632  
Narasimhāvātara (Man-lion), 30  
Nārāyaṇa. *See* Viṣṇu  
Narmadā (*gandharva* woman): gives daughters in marriage, 734  
Narmadā (river), 400, 559, 778; Arjuna Kārtavīrya blocks flow of, 777;—sports in, 775; Rāvaṇa and ministers bathe in, 776  
necklace. *See* gold necklace; pearl necklace(s)  
nectar of immortality, 159, 233, 302, 346, 427, 592, 721; churned from ocean of milk, 98, 418, 761; Garuḍa seeks and steals, 303; gods and demons desire to obtain, 97; gods and *asuras* churn ocean for, 97–98, 418, 469, 620, 757, 781, 790; gods gain, 134, 339; Mainda and Dvidida drink, 525, 560; produced from sacrifice, 395; Rāvaṇa threatens to churn ocean for, 757; Sitā tells Rāvaṇa that he could not survive assaulting her even should he drink, 319. *See also* ocean: churning of  
Nikumbha (*rākṣasa* warrior): Nila fights and kills, 581–82  
Nikumbha Kumbhakarṇi (son of Kumbhakarṇa), 647; Hanumān fights and kills, 651; minister of Rāvaṇa, 509, 546–47, 769  
Nikumbhilā (goddess), 472; Indrajit performs sacrifices at shrine of, 641, 657, 660–62  
Nila (monkey troop leader), 365, 390, 397, *passim*; appointed as scout for army, 540; confronts Prahasta at eastern gate, 573; created by gods, 787; fights Atikāya,

Nīla (monkey troop leader) (*continued*)

637; fights Indrajit, 641; fights and kills Mahodara, 634; Indrajit strikes down, 643; Nikumbha, 581–82;—Prahasta, 602–3;—Prahasta, recalled, 721; general of Rāma's army, 502, 540–41, 564, 577, 614;—of one hundred thousand troop leaders, 557; guards eastern gate, 573; Kaikeyī embraces, 722; has army camp, 543; hurls mountaintop at Kumbhakarna, 623; kills Mahodara (2), 634; member of southern search party, 400; number of troops of, 397; one of “five tigers among monkeys,” who rushes Kumbhakarna, 623; one of four monkeys who can leap to Laṅkā, 438; Pāvaki as patronymic of, 614; perches on Rāvaṇa's battle standard, 606–7; pulls out arrow in Vālin, 377; Rāma gives gifts to, 742; Rāma orders, to scout way for army, 540; Rāvaṇa attacks and fells, 606–7; son of Agni, 400, 603; scouts way for army, 541; Sugrīva orders, to assemble monkey army, 385; stationed at eastern gate, 573, 577, surrounded by one hundred million troops, 560, Triśiras immobilizes, 634

Nimi: birth of, 804; boon of, 805; brahmans churn body of, 805; curses Vasiṣṭha, 803; founder of Janaka's lineage, 122; founds Vaijayanta, 802; Gautama performs sacrifice for, 802; son of Ikṣvāku, 802; son of, called Mithi, Janaka, and Vaideha, 805; story of, 802–5; Vasiṣṭha curses, to become disembodied, 803

Niṣāda (hunter), kills *sārasa* crane (*krauñca*), 9, 54–55; Vālmiki curses, 9, 54

Niṣāda(s) (forest tribe), Guha, king of, 56, 182, 186, 220–21, 223–24, 717; boat of, 795; ferry Bharata and his army across the Ganges, 224–25; Garuḍa lays waste to realm of, 303; offer hospitality and provisions to Bharata, 220; Rāma recalls help of, 795; Viśvāmītra curses Mahodaya to become, 111

Niśākara (ascetic), ashram of, 421; boon to from, 421; foretells abduction of Sitā by, 422; foretells new wings for Saṃpāti, 422; grants boon to Saṃpāti 421; Saṃpāti tells story of meeting with, 420–22

*nītiśāstra* (statecraft), discourse of Kumbhakarna on, to Rāvaṇa, 31; Rāma questions Bharata about his conduct of, 238–41; *Rāmāyaṇa* as, 5; text on kingship and governance, 5

Nivātakavacas (class of *daityas*), alliance of, with Rāvaṇa, 760–61; boon of, 760

noose(s) (*pāśa[s]*): of Brahmā, 108; of Dharma, 80; of Kāla, 73, 80, 108, 111, 285, 292, 298, 321, 323, 326, 512, 548, 574, 590, 664, 760, 846; of Mrtyu, 285, 290, 293, 297, 737, 759; of Varuṇa, 80, 108, 403, 456, 786; of Yama, 295, 297, 307, 624, 637

northern quarter: description of, 404–6; dispatching of search party to, 407  
northern search party: dispatching of, to northern quarter, 407; failure of, to find Sitā, 409; Śatabali as leader of, 404, 407

Nṛga: brahmans curse, to become a lizard, 801–2; burrows of, 801–2; consecrates Vasu, 801; gives cows to brahmans, 800; Nārada and Pārvata alert, to danger facing him, 801; *purohita* of, not named, 801; story of, and brahmans, 800–802; Vāsudeva liberates from curse, 801  
number: of apes, 387, 393, 580; of langurs, 393; of monkeys, 385, 393, 580; of *rākṣasa* troops, 392, 513; of troops of monkeys, 397–98

oath: spoken word as, 387; swearing of, of Bharata, by Rāma's feet, 291;—of Bharata, by truth, 851;—of Daśaratha, 143, 248, 711;—of Daśaratha by acquired merit, 143;—of Daśaratha to exile Rāma, 142;—of Hanumān, 497;—Hanumān on mountains and fruits and roots, 489;—of Hanumān on truth, 534 ;—of Lakṣmaṇa, 156, 795;—of Lakṣmaṇa, on truth, 183; of—of Lakṣmaṇa on truth and bow, 153;—of Rāma, on arms and life, 794;—of Rāma, on truth, 358;—of Rāvaṇa, 572, 742;—of Sitā, on truth, 494;—of Sitā on virtue, 707 (*see also* Sitā: truth-act of);—of Sugrīva, 25, 387;—of Sugrīva, on truth, 359; of—of Sugrīva on Vālin's feet, 360;—of townspeople, on sons, 181. *See also* truth-act; vow

ocean: agitated by battle between Rāma and Rāvaṇa, 697; churning of, 97–98, 418, 469, 620, 757, 781, 790; (*see also* ocean of milk: churning of); description of, 543; difficulty in crossing, 537; digging of, 91–93, 96; god of (*see* Sāgara; Varuṇa); leaping of, by Hanumān, 14, 53, 56, 427–37, 516–18; leaping of, discussion of, 423–25; monkey army crosses, 555; monkey army reaches southern shore of, 542; Nala and monkeys build bridge across, 554–55; Rāma asks Vibhiṣaṇa how to cross 552–53;—proposes building bridge to cross, 538;—encamps

- on shore of, 543–44, 568;—and Sugrīva deliberate crossing, 542–43
- ocean of milk: churning of, 97–98; healing herbs located near, 591; in eastern quarter, 398–99; locus of Candra and Droṇa, 592; monkeys live on shore of, 394; nectar of immortality churned from (*see* nectar of immortality); supreme seers drink foam of, 761
- Odyssey, 3
- offerings: to ancestors, 87, 105, 250, 251, 283, 349, 845; to guest. *See also* guest-offering(s)
- old age: Yayāti exchanges, with son Pūru, 805–7
- Old Avadhī, 43
- Old Testament, 37
- omen(s): Lakṣmaṇa observes, 576; presage Rāma's victory and Rāvaṇa's defeat, 695; *rākṣasas* observe, 498; Rāma observes, 330–33, 576, 695; Rāma skilled in reading, 291, 695; Tārā reads 376. *See also* auspicious omen(s); inauspicious omens
- omniscient vision of ṛṣi (seer), 4, 39
- oral composition, 7
- ordeal by fire (*agniparikṣā*): of Sitā, 15, 17, 708, 710–11;—*Uttarakāṇḍa* refers to, 793
- ornament(s): 60, 69, 84, *passim*; of Agastya, accepts from Śveta;—gives to Rāma, 824;—made by Viśvakarman, 824;—Rāma accepts, 826; Anasūyā gives, to Sitā, 262; of Atikāya, 630; Daśaratha wants to give, to Sitā, 171; Garuḍa wears, 592; good conduct, of virtuous, 704; husband is a woman's finest, 461; of Kaikeyī, stripped off, 143; king of Kekeya gives to Bharata, 206; of Kumbhakarṇa, 620; of Mārīca, 313; of ministers of Rāvaṇa, 501; of monkeys, 724; of *rākṣasas*, 440–41; Rāma gives, to monkeys, 726;—orders Sitā to be adorned with, 705;—orders Vibhīṣaṇa to give, to monkeys, 714;—rejects Vibhīṣaṇa's offer of, 713; of Rambhā, broken, 767; Rāvaṇa adorns sons with, before battle, 630; promises, to Sitā, 317, 471; Sampāti sees Sitā throwing, 418; Sitā emerges from fire adorned with, 710; of Sitā broken, 337;—described, 324–27;—dropped, 357;—dropped, Jaṭāyus sees, 418;—dropped monkeys find, 485;—enflame Rāma's grief, 485;—lacking of, 459, 462–64;—wears, 418, 460;—wishes to give, to sages' wives, 794–95; Sugrīva shows, to Rāma, 357; of Vāyu, 785; of women of Rāvaṇa's inner apartments, 442–44, 446–48, 464, 466, 521. *See also* hair ornament; gold necklace; jewel; jewelry; pearl necklace(s); signet ring
- ospreys, 346, 386, 413, third path in sky, that of, 419; women shriek like, 700
- Oṣṭhakarṇakas (name of a people), 399
- Padmā (goddess), 853
- Padma (guardian elephant [*diggajal*]), 776. *See also* Mahāpadma
- Padma (presiding deity of Kubera's treasury), 750–51
- padma* (type of mansion), 440
- padma(ka)* (type of sandalwood), 390, 402, 418
- padma(ka)* (type of tree), 394, 404, 516
- Pahlavas: destroy Viśvāmitra's army, 106; produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 106–107; Viśvāmitra's army destroys, 106
- palace of Rāvaṇa: description of, 443–46; Puṣpaka (flying palace) as, 445–46. *See also* Puṣpa/Puṣpaka(vimāna)
- Pampā (lake), 13, 53, 56, 72, 354–55, 717; description of, 346–47, 349–52; Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa arrive at, 351; as residence of Sugrīva and monkeys, 345–46, 347, 349, 350; Rśyamukha located east of, 347
- Pampā (pond), 346, 716
- Pampā (river), 269
- Panasa (monkey troop leader), 525, 540–41, 574; advises Rāma about Vibhīṣaṇa, 573; Aṅgada exhorts to fight, 622; arrives in Kiṣkindhā, 397; cut through with a sword, 565; dwells on Mount Pāriyātra, 558; struck down in battle, 643; Suṣeṇa sends to ocean of milk for healing herbs, 592
- panasa* (tree or fruit), 227, 323, 276, 281, 346, 565
- Pañcajana: Viṣṇu kills, on Mount Caravān, 403
- Pāñcajanya (conch [*śaṅkha*] of Viṣṇu), 737
- Pañcāpsaras (Pond of the Five Apsarases): etymology of name of, 247; story of, 274
- Pañcavaṭī (forest), 12–13, 281; Agastya directs Rāma to, 279; description of, 281–82; Rāma dwells in, with Sitā and Lakṣmaṇa in, 12, 281
- Pāṇḍavas: devious behavior of, 38
- Pāṇḍyas (region), 400–401
- panegyrists (*bandins*), 35, 137, 146, 159, 201, 224, 395, 722
- parasol. *See* umbrella
- Paraśurāma. *See* Rāma Jāmadagnya
- parāyaṇa* (recitation). *See* *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*: recitation of
- Pāriyātra (mountain), 403, 500, 558
- Parjanya (god of rain), 295, 495, 559, 727, 845

- Pārsvamauli, 750  
Parvata (divine seer): alerts Nṛga to danger facing him, 801  
Pārvata (king of *gandharvas*), 228  
Pārvati (Umā). 95; austerities of, 87–88; curses gods and the Earth 88–89; daughter of Himalaya, 87–88; grants boons to Sukeśa, 732–33; helps Śiva retain semen, 88; left eye of Kubera burned by gazing at, 748; offers Ila half a boon, 834; Śiva and, grant Sukeśa boons, 732–33; Śiva as lord of, 736; Śiva marries, 88; Śiva turns himself into a woman to delight, 833; story of Śiva and, and Ila/Illā, 833–34  
Passion Play, 6  
past lives. *See* birth(s): reaping consequences of previous  
Paśupati. *See* Śiva  
Pātāla (underworld), 346, 370, 407–8, 436, 543, 610–11, 843; *asuras* inhabit, 432; *dānavas* inhabit, 423, 554, 577, 697, 843; Kauśiki rescued from, 494; *rākṣasas* enter, 740; Rāma demands Sītā be brought back from, 843. *See also* Rasātala  
path(s): of ancestors, 131, 246; of crows as second in sky, 419; of falcons as fourth in sky, 419; Ganges goes by three, 76, 87–88, 96–97, 182, 186, 716; of kites as third in sky, 419; of *krauñcas* as third in sky, 419; of *kuliñgas* as first in sky, 419; of sons of Vinatā as highest in sky, of *haṃsas* as sixth in sky, 419; of ospreys as third in sky, 419; of vultures as fifth in sky, 419  
*pativrata* (ideal wife), 5, 22, 24. *See also* ideal wife  
Paulastya(s), lineage of, 74; House of, 299; patronymic of Indrajit, 655, 664;—of Rāvaṇa (Daśagrīva), 321, 463, 470, 612, 614, 672, 746, 752–53;—of Triśiras/Trimūrdhan, 633;—of Vibhīšana, 743;—of Viśravas, 730, 741, 746; Rāma kills, 740  
*Paulastyavadha* (Slaying of Paulastya): alternative name of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 3, 57  
Paulomī. *See* Śaci  
*pañḍarika* (sacrifice): of Rāma, 726  
Pauravas (region): searched by northern search party, 404  
Pauravas (vedic clan); associated with the *Mahābhārata*, 35  
Pavana. *See* Vāyu  
peacock: Indra grants boon to, 754–55  
pearl necklace(s): Indra has Vāyu give Rāma, 725; of Kaikeyī, 142; of Sītā, 325; Rāma gives Hanumān, 789; Rāma gives Sītā, 726; of Rāvaṇa’s women, 447, 451; of Sītā falls during abduction, 325; Sītā gives Hanumān, 726; Vidyādhara women wear, 430  
performance, of *Rāmāyaṇa*. *See* *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*: recitation of  
*phalaśruti* (fruitful hearing): benefit of hearing *Rāmāyaṇa*, 9  
Plakṣa (monkey): announces Lakṣmaṇa’s arrival, 389  
*plakṣa* (tree), 67, 346  
poem (*kāvya*): *Rāmāyaṇa* as first (*ādikāvya*), 4; uniqueness of *Rāmāyaṇa* as, 3–4; *Uttarakāṇḍa* identified as, 844; *Vālmiki-rāmāyaṇa* self identifies as, 55–57, 818, 839–40, 844. *See also* poetry; *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*  
poet(s) (*kavis*): *Vālmiki* as first (*ādikavi*), 4; *Vālmiki* and Vyāsa as historian-, 39–40  
poetry (*kāvya* or *śloka*): *Rāmāyaṇa* as, 3, 4; *Vālmiki* creates, 9, 54–55;—renders *Rāmāyaṇa* story into, 57. *See also* poem; *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*  
poison, 197, 283, 301, *passim*; Devayānī threatens suicide by, 806; drinking *kālakūṭa* as a means of suicide, 318; drinking of, 323, 326, 473, 750;—as a means of feticide, 252;—as a means of suicide, 150, 454; food consisting of, 511; herbs counteract, 430; in food, 224, 286; monkeys threaten suicide by, 454;—warned about fruit and water mixed with, 540; murder by, 474; Sagara (*sa-gara*) born with, 122, 252; Sītā threatens suicide by, 163–64, 314, 477–78; women of Ayodhyā, threaten suicide by, 181  
politics: gendering of, in *Ayodhyākāṇḍa*, 12  
popular saying. *See* proverbs: “no such thing as untimely death,” 477  
porcupine: eating of, by brahmins and kshatriyas, 370  
porridge, 212, 229; Daśaratha apportions, to wives, 69–70; emerges from sacrificial fire, 69  
portents. *See* auspicious omen(s); inauspicious omens; omen(s)  
power(s) of illusion (*māyā*): of ascetics (*see* ascetic power); Kāla created by, 849; of Indrajit, 588–89, 592, 641, 655–56, 661–62, 673, 729, 772; of Indrajit called *tāmasi*, 764; of Mārīca, 325–26; of Mārīca and Subāhu, 83–84; of Maya, 327; of *rākṣasas*, 630, 751; of Rāma, 700; of Rāvaṇa, 341, 545–46, 685, 693, 696, 751, 76; Rāvaṇa’s chariot fashioned through, 320; Rāvaṇa’s weapons infused with, 696; Śiva (Paśupati) gives to Indrajit, 764; of Tāṭakā, 79; of Vidyujjihva, 564; of Viṣṇu as yogic, 82

- Prabhāva (monkey): announces arrival of Lakṣmaṇa, 389, 577
- Prācetasā: Vālmiki as, 840
- Praghasa (field marshal of Rāvaṇa): Hanumān fights and kills, 502–3; son of Sumālin, 734
- Praghasa (minister of Vibhīṣaṇa), 573
- Praghasa (monkey hero), 577
- Praghasa (*rākṣasa*): Sugrīva fights and kills, 581
- Praghāsā (*rākṣasa* woman), 472
- Prāgyotiṣa (city): *dānava* Naraka lives on, 403; located on Varāha mountain, 403
- Prahasta (minister of Rāvaṇa), 729, 732, 744, 745, 749–50, 769, 776–78; Arjuna Kārtavīrya fells in battle, 778; encourages Rāvaṇa to fight Kubera, 744; Rāvaṇa sends as messenger to Kubera, 744–46; son of Sumālin, 734
- Prahasta (*rākṣasa* general), 509–10, 567, 603, 610, 629, 668, 678, 715, 728, 729, 732; battles monkey army, 601–2; believes returning Sītā, is only way to avoid war, 599; inauspicious omens presage defeat of, 600; interrogates Hanumān, 509–10; Nīla fights and kills, 602, 721; Rāvaṇa claims, killed Rāma, 565–66;—dispatches to battle, 599–600;—stations at eastern gate, 572–73; son of Jambumālin, 500; vows to fight for Rāvaṇa, 546
- Praheti (*rākṣasa*, brother of Heti), 732
- Prahlāda/Prahrāda (*asura* devotee of Viṣṇu), 30, 649
- Prajaṅgha (*rākṣasa*): fights Saṃpātī (monkey), 581
- Prajāpati. *See* Brahmā
- Prajāpatis (lords of creatures): Brahmā fourth of six, 470; Jaṭāyus names, 280; Vivasvant first among, 251
- Pramāthin (monkey troop leader), 559, 577
- Pramāthin (*rākṣasa* warrior): Rāma fights and kills, 291, 293
- Prasravaṇa (mountain), 298, 336; monkeys return to, without Sītā, 408–9; Rāma lives on, 381; Sītā implores, for aid, 320; Sugrīva and Rāma meet on, 395–96. *See also* Mālyavān (mountain)
- Prasthalas: northern quarter location of country of, 404
- Pratapana (*rākṣasa*): battles Nala, 581
- Pratardana (ally of Rāma): Rāma embraces and dismisses, 787
- Pratiṣṭhāna (city): founded by Ila, 837; inherited by Purūravas, 837
- Prativāsudeva, 36
- Prauṣṭhapada (month), 383
- Prayāga (confluence), 225, 228; Rāma's visit to, 188–90
- preceptor: of the Taittirīyas, 166; Śukra, of demons, 415, 715. *See also purohita(s)*
- pregnancy: gaze of Pulastya causes, 729; of Sālakaṭaṅkaṭā, 732; Sītā, 17, 796; of Tṛṇabindu's daughter, 729; of wives of Asita, 252; Rāma observes signs of, in Sītā, 791
- prenuptial promise: Daśaratha breaks, 23
- preservation: of bodies of Nimi, 804;—in vat of oil, 202, 822. *See also* corpse(s): preservation of, of Nimi
- previous lives. *See* birth(s): reaping consequences of previous; reincarnation
- proclaim: name when entering battle, 326, 500, 579, 635, 760, 762
- prologue (*upodghāta*) of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 4, 6, 9–10, 39, 51–58
- protection of ascetics: protection of, as duty of kings
- proverbs, 197, 241, 246–47, 415, 499, 800; “cheerfulness, perseverance, and mental fortitude produce success in an undertaking,” 410; “It is impossible for a man or a woman to die before the appointed time,” 473; “giving away of something that has been given brings great benefits,” 824; “grief diminishes with the passage of time,” 543; “Joy will eventually come to a person who lives, even if it takes a hundred years,” 482, 719; “kshatriya has no real power,” 106; “living in forest is nectar of immortality,” 233; “men take after their mothers not their fathers,” 283; “no such thing as untimely death,” 477; “in this world a man's destiny inevitably follows him,” 416; “When a husband dies first, they say it is because of the wife's lack of virtue,” 566
- Prṥthivī (goddess of earth), 177. *See also* Dharaṇī; Mādhavī; Vasudā
- Pulastya (brahman-seer), 837; ashram of, 729–30; curse of, on girls, 729; descendants of, 289–90; distracted by young girls, 729; gaze of causes pregnancy, 729; marries Tṛṇabindu's daughter, 730; one of the mind-born sons of Brahmā, 470; one of the Prajāpatis, 280, 470; *rākṣasas* spring from lineage of, 732; requests Arjuna Kārtavīrya to release Rāvaṇa, 779–80; son of Brahmā, 729, 780; Tṛṇabindu recognizes curse of, 730; Viśravas son of, 28, 730, 741
- Pulindas: northern quarter location of country of, 404

Puloman: Anulāda seizes daughter of (Śaci) (comparison), 396; carries Jayanta from battlefield, 770; father of Śaci, 396–97, 490; grandfather of Jayanta, 770; Indra kills, 397

punishment, 18, 360, 415, 421, 483, *passim*; for committing sin, 371, 372; *daṇḍa* as word for, 827; death as, 371, 385, 414, 513, 528, 562, 850; death as, for illicit sexual relations, 371; death not, for emissaries, 512;—of Vālin as, 371–72; deformity as, 421; execution as harshest, 247; Hanumān encourages Rāma to inflict, on *rākṣasas*, 608;—seeks, against *rākṣasa* wardresses, 34, 704; imprisonment as, 416; Kaikeyī as deserving, 247; kings mete out, 203, 338, 369, 370–71; kings wield rod of, 264; kshatriyas mete out, 60; Māndhātṛ inflicts, 371; of ministers, 562; *rākṣasa* women seek, for Hanumān, 499;—should not be subject to, 34 704; Rāma metes out, 18, 338, 371, 578; Rāma's judgement in determining, 372; relative nature of, 80; rod (*daṇḍa*) of, 264, 452, 512, 578, 826; Sitā threatens Rāvaṇa with, from Rāma, 320; of sons, 60; Sugrīva as wielder of, 410, 414, 416, 425, 452, 528; tail of Hanumān set on fire as, 27, 513; by Vālin, 360–61; on Vālin by Rāma, 371–72; Vālin freed from sin of, 372. *See also* Daṇḍa (son of Ikṣvāku)

Puñjikasthalā (*apsaras*), 425. *See also* Añjanā *purohita*(s) (household priest[s]): Agni as, of gods, 89; Bṛhaspati as, of gods, 339;—of Indra, 723; function of, defined, 35; as members of royal court, 35; Kāncana as, of Śatrughna, 852; of Arjuna Kārtavīrya not named, 780; of Bharata not named, 718; of Daśaratha not named, 120, 146, 213–14, 219; of Nṛga not named, 801; of Rāma not named, 800; of Romapāda not named, 61–62; of Śatrughna not named, 818; of Viśvāmītra not named, 105; Śātānanda as, of Janaka, 102–3, 120–21; Uśanas Kāvya as, of *asuras*, 599;—of Daṇḍa, 827;—of *rākṣasas*, 599; Vāmadeva as, of Rāma, 60, 133, 820; Vasiṣṭha as, of Bharata, 203–6, 209, 212–14, 218–19, 225–26, 231, 235–36, 239, 243–44, 228, 238, 244, 248, 251, 253, 255, 257, 725;—of Daśaratha, 52, 60, 62–66, 68, 71–73, 75, 120–26, 133, 136–37, 339, 798–99;—of Ikṣvāku, 804;—of Mitrasaha, 812–13;—of Rāma, 723–25, 810–11, 820–21, 837, 841, 850–51, 853;—of Triśaṅku, 109–10, 541

Pūru: birth of, 805; rules in Pratiṣṭhāna, 807; son of Śarmiṣṭhā, 805; son of Yayāti, 805–7; Yayāti consecrates, 807; Yayāti exchanges old age with, 805–7

Purūravas: birth of, 836; inherits Pratiṣṭhāna, 837; king of Kāśī, 804; name of a king, 755; son of Ilā and Budha, 836; Urvaśī and, 319

Pūṣan (name of a god or one of the Ādityas), 158

Puṣkara (forest and lake), 113–15, 800; Viśvāmītra performs austerities at, 114

Puṣkara (son of Bharata): established as king in Puṣkarāvati, 846–47

Puṣkara (unidentified figure): fights Rāvaṇa, 761; goes forth with Go, 761

Puṣkarāvati: Bharata founds, 846–47

Puṣpa/Puṣpaka(vimāna), 18, 31, 121, *passim*; as abode of divinity, 758; attends Rāma, 822; Brahmā gives, to Kubera, 731; brought to a halt in the sky, 751; comes to and serves Rāma, 789–90; departs for the abode of Kubera, 723; description of, 445–46, 714; does not carry a widow, 589; flies wherever one desires, 318, 714, 751; Hanumān searches, 445–46, 451; Kubera owns, 299, 318, 329, 731; Kumbhakarṇa sees Rāvaṇa in, 615; Nandiśvara orders, turned back, 752; Rāma dismisses, 790;—reaches Kiṣkiṇḍhā in, 721;—returns to Nandigrāma in, 15, 53–54, 56, 714–16, 721–22;—searches for Śambūka in, 18, 822–23;—visits Agastya's ashram in, 823–24, 829; Rāvaṇa conquers realms from, 756–81;—falls from, 476;—offers Sitā to use, 329;—roams earth in, 754;—seated in, 615;—sees Kubera in, 742;—steals, from Kubera, 299, 329, 699, 713, 751; Sitā observes battlefield from, 587–89; Sugrīva and his army board, 715; Sumālin sees Kubera in, 740; Trijaṭā forces Sitā into, 587;—turns around, 589; Vibhiṣaṇa lends, to Rāma, 31, 56, 713–14; Viśvakarman creates, for Brahmā, 446; yoked to *haṃsas*, 825

Puṣya (chariot), 160

Puṣya (constellation, asterism), 132, 134–35, 138, 140, 146, 159, 282, 721

Put (a hell), 249

queens of Ayodhyā. *See* Kaikeyī; Kausalyā; Sumitrā

Qur'an, 3

rabbit: eating of by brahmins and kshatriyas, 370

Rāghava. *See* Lakṣmaṇa; Rāma

Raghu (son of Kakutstha), 36, 122, 252  
Rāhu (demon of the eclipse), 125, 295, 305, *passim*; desires to devour the sun god Sūrya, 784; Hanumān mauls, 784–85; in story of Hanumān's birth, 784–85; son of Simhikā, 784  
raining blood: as inauspicious omen, 29, 571, 576, 594, 679, 695, 737, 741  
rainy season: description of, 382–83;—of end of, by Rāma, 386; inflames lust, 197, 382; living outdoors during, a type of austerity, 115; seduction of R̥śyaśr̥ṅga will bring, 61–63; Sugrīva does not notice end of, 387  
*rājadharmā* (royal duty), 17, 20; in *Uttara-kāṇḍa*, 16  
Rājādhiraṅga (king of kings): as title, 35  
Rājagṛha (city), 12, 140, 719; Bharata and Śatruḅha depart from, 206; Bharata and Śatruḅha live with grandfather in, 203–4; messengers of Vasiṣṭha arrive at, 205; Vasiṣṭha sends messengers to, 204  
*rājasūya* (sacrifice), 35; Bharata advises Rāma not to perform, 830; Lakṣmaṇa recommends, 830; of Daśaratha, 238, 356; as destructive, 830; of Indrajit, 764; purifies one of all sins, 830; Rāma wishes to perform, 829–30  
*rākṣasa* army: battles gods, 769–73; —Hanumān, 598–99, 663;—monkey army, 580–83, 595, 597, 647, 651–52, 657, 662, 668, 675, 679–80;—Viṣṇu, 737–40;—*yakṣas*, 749–51; believes Rāma slain by Indrajit, 586; of fourteen thousand, Dūṣaṇa rallies, 293;—Khara dispatches and leads, 289;—Rāma battles and destroys, 52, 293–94;—Rāma destroys, recalled, 300, 301, 327, 677; Garuḍa drives back, 736; monkey army destroys, of Rāvaṇa, 15; number of troops in, 539, 676; Rāma destroys, of Rāvaṇa, 15, 676; troop leaders of, Rāvaṇa sends forth, 502–503, 594—Rāvaṇa stations, to guard city, 572–73  
*rākṣasa* brahmins. *See* brahman *rākṣasas*  
*rākṣasas*, 27–28, 32, *passim*; abandon Laṅkā in fear of Viṣṇu, 731, 740, 744; as eaters of human flesh, 28, 83, 87, 273, 276, 288, 327, 332, 334, 346, 587, 603, 612, 732, 780; attempt to awaken Kumbhakarna, 610–11; beat and drag Hanumān, 508; Brahmā creates, 732; brahmins among, recite vedic *mantras*, 463; bring offerings to Rāma, 703; changing of form at will by (*see* shape-shifting: of *rākṣasas*); chiefs of, boast of killing Rāma single-handedly, 546; code of conduct of, 465; consecrate

Rāvaṇa as lord of, 745–46; culture of, stands in opposition to that of Aryan, 28; description of, 440–42; each returns to own divine source, 855; engage in religious observances, 440, 443; etymology of word, 732; exotic food of, 451; flee to 731, 740, 744, 817; flesh-eating (*see* flesh-eating: by *rākṣasas*); funeral practices of (*see* Kabandha; Rāvaṇa: funerary rites of; Virāḍha: burial of); genealogy of, 16, 732–35; grief of mothers of slain, 501; Hanumān battles, 499–506, 513–14; —recalled, 782–83; in guise of cook offers Vasiṣṭha human flesh, 813; in guise of Vasiṣṭha, asks Mitrasaha for meat, 812; inauspicious omens presage destruction of (*see* inauspicious omens); intoxication of, 441; Khara dispatches fourteen, to attack Rāma, 286–87; —dispatches fourteen thousand, 289; kill ascetics, 269; live in Pātāla, 740 (*see also* Pātāla); live in 731, 744 (*see also* Rasātala); Mārica foretells destruction of, 306, 309; night battle between monkeys and, 582–83; number of, in Laṅkā, 392, 539; parodies of *āryan* civilization, 27–28; perform sacrifices, 440, 443; power of illusion of, 83, 630, 751; Rāma battles and kills fourteen, 12, 287;—battles and kills fourteen thousand, 52, 291–94;—battles and kills fourteen thousand recalled, 300–301, 303, 326, 460, 474, 490, 652, 677, 720;—six, 583; Rāvaṇa dispatches eight, to Janasthāna, 327–28;—dispatches fourteen thousand, to Janasthāna, 763–64; Rāvaṇa stations, to defend Laṅkā, 572; re-occupy Laṅkā, 745–46; revival of Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa dismays, 593–94; secret police of, 440; set fire to Hanumān's tail, 513; sound of monkey army demoralizes, 570; take on form at will, 392, 812; two lineages of, 740; Uśanas Kāvya as *purohita* of, 599; Viṣṇu takes birth to slaughter, 740;—vows to kill, 736; weapons of, 440–41, 443, 500; worship Viṣṇu, 854; *yakṣas* and, Brahmā, creates, 732  
*rākṣasa* wardresses: description of, 462, 469; eaters of humans, 330, 462, 472, 475, 521; Hanumān asks Sitā for permission to kill, 704;—terrorizes, 498–99; intoxication of, 462, 472; menace Sitā, 330, 471–72, 477; Rāvaṇa orders, to guard Sitā, 330, 327; report Hanumān to Rāvaṇa, 499; show Sitā battlefield in Puṣpaka, 587; Sitā defies, 471, 473–74;—tells Saramā that, menace her, 569;—tells Hanumān not to punish, 704; tell Sitā of Hanumān's punishment,

*rākṣasa* wardresses (*continued*)

513; terrorize Sītā in *aśoka* grove, 14, 33, 330, 470–72, 477;—recounted, 521; Trijaṭā rails at, for terrorizing Sītā, 476; worship Nikumbhilā, 472

*rākṣasa* women: blame Śūrpaṇakhā, 676–77; characterization of, 32–34; foretell Rāvaṇa's downfall, 678; grief of, 297, 676–78, 699–700; intoxication of, 442, 447–48, 463; lament of, for Rāvaṇa, 699–700;—their slain kinsmen, 676–78; not monolithically evil, 28; Surasā takes form of, 434. *See also* Dhānyamālīnī; Mandodarī; Rāvaṇa: wives and courtesans of, described

ram. *See* Vātāpi, as demon ram

Rāma (Aikṣvāka, Dāsaratha, Kākutṣtha, Rāghava): abandons Sītā, 6, 17, 18, 19, 794–98; accompanies Viśvāmitra to Mithilā, 10–11, 83; addresses people of Ayodhyā, 177–78; adherence to righteousness (*dharma*) by, 11; admonishes Khara, 296; Agastya and (*see* Agastya); Agni instructs, to take Sītā back, 710; agrees to take Lakṣmaṇa to forest, 165;—Sītā to forest, 164; as Aīśvāka, 77, 182, 184;—Lakṣmaṇa, and as, 342; alliance of, with Sugrīva, 13, 25, 30, 53, 56, 356–58, 364, 486, 716;—sanctified by fire, 356, 358; ancestors gratified by, 845; Aṅgada as messenger of, 578–79;—tells story of, to Sampātī, 417–18; argues against his own consecration, 245, 246–47, 250–51; army of, encamps near Mount Suvela, 563–64; arrives at Lake Pampā, 351; arrow(s) of;—Agastya gives, 278;—described, 266, 278, 287, 293–94, 363–64, 368, 697, 698, 810;—fledged with Garuḍa's feathers, 698;—invested with Brahmā's weapon-spell, 278, 698;—take any form at will, 690; ascends to heaven, 853–55; as an ascetic, 144, 152, 175, 209, 237, 258, 283, 306, 466, 566; ascetics host, for ten years, 274;—seek protection of, 12, 258, 264–65, 269, 273, 808;—show hospitality to, 264–65; ashram of, 52, 189–190, 230, 236, 242–43, 281, 284, 287, 279, 304, 309–10, 323–24, 720; asks Jaṭāyus to protect Sītā, 312;—javelin to spare Lakṣmaṇa, 686;—Lakṣmaṇa to protect Sītā, 312; *aśoka* grove of, 725, 790–91; assents to his own exile, 150; audience of, with Bharadvāja, 56, 188–90, 716–17; banishes Lakṣmaṇa, 19, 850–51; battles and kills fourteen *rākṣasas*, 12, 287;—fourteen thousand *rākṣasas*, 12, 291–94;—fourteen thousand

recalled, 300–301, 303, 326, 460, 474, 490, 652, 677, 720;—six *rākṣasas*, 583; Bhadra tells, rumors about Sītā, 791–92; Bharadvāja directs, to Citrakūṭa, 189–90; Bharata and (*see* Bharata); birth of, 10, 71;—through own intention, 849; bleeding of, 565, 584, 589, 591, 655, 692; boons to, Bharadvāja grants, 717;—gods grant, 53, 721, 823;—Indra grants, 712–13, 722; born in House of Ikṣvāku, 51, 329, 356; bow of, 585, 604–605, 626, 675–76, 683, 687, 689; Brahmā and (*see* Brahmā); brahman blames, for death of child, 18, 820; brahmans of Ayodhyā address, 178–79; breaks Śiva's bow, 11, 13, 119;—Virādhā's right arm, 266; brothers of, as “life breaths outside body of,” 793;—bound by oath to Rāma, 794; as Cakravartin (Universal Emperor), 35; calms Lakṣmaṇa, 235–36, 387–88; character synopsis of, 20–21; chariot battle of, with Rāvaṇa, 689–93, 695–98; closeness of Lakṣmaṇa and, 493–94; compared to Viṣṇu, 51, 609 (*see also* Rāma: as Supreme Being, Lord, Soul, or Spirit *this entry*); compassion of, 34, 131, 149, 167, 181, 186, 195–96, 258, 260, 337, 369, 392, 460, 474, 478, 493, 513–14, 534, 593;—for crow, 493; complaint of seers to, about *rākṣasas*, 258–59; confides in Lakṣmaṇa, 187–88; confrontation of, with Rāma Jāmadagnya, 11, 56, 126–28; consecrates Aṅgada and Candraketu, 847;—Lava and Kuśa, 851–52; consecration of, 16, 725–26;—Ayodhyā readied for, 136–38;—ends some versions of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 19;—interrupted, 56, 150;—priests prepare for, 146–47; consoles Kausalyā, 157–58;—Vālin, 372; conversation with Niṣāda chief (Guha), 56, 183–84; cremates Jaṭāyus, 342; crosses bridge to Laṅkā with army, 555;—Ganges (Mandākinī), 56, 186–87; cuts off Kabandha's right arm, 343; Daśaratha as foil for, 12, 23;—exiles Rāma, 11, 149–51;—spirit of, instructs, 711–12; death of *rākṣasas* in Janasthāna by, recalled, 564, 700–701;—of *rākṣasas* in Laṅkā by, recalled, 728;—of Virādhā by, recalled, 564, 677, 697, 716, 719; deeds of, praised sages, 728–29;—recalled, 717; defends Viśvāmitra's sacrifice, 10, 82–83; deliberates crossing the ocean, 542–43; describes end of rainy season, 386;—hardships of the forest to Sītā, 161–62;—Pañcavaṭī, 281; description of, 51–52, 72, 130–31, 300–301, 354, 355, *passim*; description of body of, 133,

484–85; designated as prince regent, 11, 131–35; destroys *rākṣasa* army of Rāvaṇa, 15, 676; determined to kill Rāvaṇa himself, 574; devoted to the welfare of all, 103, 132, 189, 193, 219, 304, 306, 317, 321, 337, 338, 369, 412, 556, 676, 712, 850; directs Lakṣmaṇa to find Sugrīva, 350; discourses of, on fate, 378;—on righteousness and statecraft, 154, 238–41, 272–73; 370–72, *passim*; dismisses allies, 17, 787–89;—Guha, 186;—Puṣpaka, 790, 829;—Rāvaṇa from battle, 15, 30, 609;—Sumantra, 184–86; dispatches monkey army to find Indrajit, 584; Durvāsas foretells future of, to Daśaratha, 799;—visits, 849–50; dwells with Sitā and Lakṣmaṇa in Pañcavati, 12, 281–84; eats meat, 187, 791 (*see also* hunting: of Rāma); encamps on banks of Ganges, 182–84;—on Mount Suvela with chief monkeys, 574–76;—on northern shore with army, 543–44; encounter of, with Kabandha, 32, 53, 56, 343–47;—with Kabandha recalled, 460, 564, 627, 677, 697, 716, 717, 720;—with Samudra, 553–54 (*see also* Sāgara);—with Virādha, 12, 32, 52, 265–67;—with Virādha, recalled, 460, 474, 564, 627, 677, 697, 716, 719; enters blazing power of Viṣṇu at Sarayū, 854;—Daṇḍaka forest, 12, 52, 56, 264; establishes ashram on Citrakūṭa, 190–91; exhorts Sugrīva to search for Sitā, 358; exile of, to Daṇḍaka forest, 56, 144, 150, 152, 168–69;—recalled, 208–9, 245, 434, 510, 519–20; fasting of, 223, 251, 306; fears criticism of people, 17, 793; fights and kills Agniketu, Raśmiketū, Suptagha, and Yajñakopa, 581;—Dūṣaṇa, 32, 52, 293;—Dūṣaṇa recalled, 52, 293; Rāma fights and kills recalled, 300–301, 303, 327, 461, 480, 564, 585, 652, 677, 697, 715;—Khara, 52, 56, 295–98;—Khara recalled, 300–301, 303, 307, 314, 321–23, 327, 329, 460–61, 480, 547, 564–65, 585, 627, 677, 692, 697, 700, 716 ;—Kumbhakarna, 626–28;—Mahākāpāla, Sthūlākṣa, and Pramāthin, 291–93; Makarākṣa, 652–53;—Triśiras, 32, 52, 56, 294–95; fights Indrajit, 584–85, 642, 654–55;—Ravaṇa, 608–9, 683–85, 687, 689–98;—and kills Rāvaṇa in final battle, 695–98; filial devotion of, 11; final audience of, with Daśaratha, 167–72; followers of, assume celestial forms, 854–55; founds Aṅgadiyā for Aṅgada, 847;—Candrakāntā for Candraketu, 847;—Kuśavati for Kuśa, 852;—Śrāvati

for Lava, 852; frees Ahalyā from curse, 101–2;—Kabandha from curse, 344–45;—Virādha from curse, 266–67; friendship of, with Sugrīva, 354, 356, 358, 364, 371, 549–50, 590, 725; Garuḍa heals wounds of, and Lakṣmaṇa, 592; genealogy of, 121–122, 251–52; gives armlets to Aṅgada, 726;—arrow of Viṣṇu to Śatrughna, 810—away wealth, 11, 165–66;—donations to ascetics, 845;—gifts to brahmins, 726;—gifts to Sugrīva and Vibhiṣaṇa, 788;—Sitā pearl necklace, 726; gods remind, of true identity, 708–710, 844; grief of, 19, 172, 241–242, 266;—at seeing Lakṣmaṇa pierced by javelin, 686;—for Jaṭāyus, 342;—over abandonment of Sitā, 794, 799–800;—over banishment of Lakṣmaṇa, 850, 851;—over death of brahman boy, 820–21;—over false report of Sitā's death, 658, 661;—over separation from Sitā, 334–336, 339, 349, 351–52, 355, 357–58, 381, 385–87, 393, 485–86, 488–89, 530, 537–38, 543–44;—over Sitā's return to her mother, 843–44; Hanumān and (*see* Hanumān); has golden image of Sitā fashioned, 18, 838; has Lakṣmaṇa consecrate Vibhiṣaṇa, 15, 31, 53, 552, 702–3; history of, 355, 356, 413;—Lavaṇa heard by, 808–809; identification of, with Viṣṇu, 128, 571, 677, 709–10, 740, 844, 848–49, 854; Ikṣvāku as ancestor of, 36; impervious to weapons of Indrajit, 642; inaugurates Rāmarājya, 5–6, 16; as *avatāra* (incarnation) of Viṣṇu, 4, 5n, 9, 11, 20, 35, 40, 844; Indra foretells great feat of, 267–68;—has Vāyu give golden necklace and lotuses to, 725;—sends weapons, chariot, and Mātali to, 689; Indrajit binds, and Lakṣmaṇa with serpent weapons, 24, 32, 584–85;—reports death of, and Lakṣmaṇa, 586; informs brothers of the people's allegations, 793;—Kausalyā of his exile, 152;—Sitā of his exile, 159–60; inner apartments of, 147, 311, 791, 853; instructs monkeys not to take human form in battle, 574; as instrument of Rāvaṇa's destruction, 524; Jābālī urges, to accept kingship, 249–50; Jaṭāyus reassures, 341;—tells, about Sitā's abduction, 340–41; journey of, with Viśvāmītra, 10–11, 75–102; justifies killing Vālin, 370–72; Kabandha directs to, Pampā, 346–47;—urges alliance between Sugrīva and, 345–46, 347; Kaikeyi informs, of impending exile, 150; Kausalyā and co-wives meet with, on Mount Citrakūṭa, 243–44;—blesses, 158–59; Khara and, mock each other,

Rāma (Aikṣvāka, Dāśarathi, Kākutstha, Rāghava) (*continued*)  
297–98; kicks Dundubhi's skeleton, 53, 363; killing of Vālin by, as unjst, 370; kills Mārīca, 13, 312–13;—Rāvaṇa, 15, 698;—kills Śambūka by beheading, 18–20, 41, 822–23;—Subāhu, 10, 83;—Tātakā, 10, 79;—Vālin by ambush, 13, 14, 25, 26, 368;—Virādha, 266–67; Kumbhakarna decimates monkey army, 5, 31, 624; Lakṣmaṇa and, (*see* Lakṣmaṇa); Lakṣmaṇa as emotional foil for, 11, 22;—as second life breath of, 22, 72, 561;—builds hut for, 191, 282;—calms, 338–40;—consoles, 335, 381, 386, 658–60, 800; describes winter to, 282–83;—guards door for, 848;—urges, to proceed with the consecration, 156–57;—urges, to search for Sitā, 335, 338–39;—warns, about golden deer, 310;—warns, of arrival of Bharata's army, 234–36; lament of, for Sitā, 13, 333–35, 385, 543–44;—for Lakṣmaṇa, 589–90, 687–88; Lava and Kuśa (*see* Kuśa; Lava; Rāma: sons of, as disciples of Vālmiki *this entry*); Lavaṇa and (*see* Lavaṇa); learns of Daśaratha's death, 241; leaves Ayodhyā with Sitā and Lakṣmaṇa, 11, 172–74; lies wounded on bed of arrows, 585, 590–91; life span of, complete, 849; like madman from grief over Sitā, 334–35; lives with Lakṣmaṇa in cave during rainy season, 380–81; love for Sitā, 129; madness of, 13, 336–38, 843; Mālyavān counsels Rāvaṇa to make peace with, 570–72; manliness of, 357–58; marches southward with army, 540–42; Mārīca as golden deer lures, into forest, 13, 312–13;—cries for help in voice of, 13, 313;—praises, 304;—recalls previous encounter with, 305–7; marriage of, to Sitā, 11, 123–25; married life of, 791; matted locks (hair) of, 144, 150, 155, 186, 222, 238, 247, 265, 284, 719;—abandoned, 724; Māyā as immemorial consort of, 854; meets Jaṭāyus, 279–81;—Sugriva, 13, 356;—Sugriva on Mount Prasravaṇa [Mālyavān], 395–96; ministers of, 800, 820–21, 853;—consulted, 850–51; monkey army leaders advise, on Vibhiṣaṇa, 549–51;—protects, and Lakṣmaṇa, 586–87; monkeys report Sitā's condition to, 531–32;—seek refuge with, 605, 624, 626, 636; as most central and compelling character in the epic, 20; mothers of, ascend to heaven, 845; mourns Daśaratha's death, 241–43; must rescue Sita himself, 491, 495, 522, 535; Nārada describes practices of social classes in

*yugas*, 821–22;—explains untimely death of child to, 18, 821;—narrates adventures of, to Vālmiki, 9, 51–54; not mentioned as incarnation of Viṣṇu in *upodghāta*, 9; as object of emulation, 20–21; observes Sitā's pregnancy, 791; offers to consecrate Lakṣmaṇa as prince regent, 726; as one of true vows, 850–51; orders Lakṣmaṇa to abandon Sitā, 794–97;—Sitā to be proven innocent publicly, 710;—Vibhiṣaṇa to bring Sitā, 705;—Vibhiṣaṇa to perform Rāvaṇa's funerary rites, 30, 701–2; people of Ayodhyā lament exile of, 166–67, 173–75, 180–81; poetic fame deserved by, 844; posts troops at gates of Laṅkā, 573–74; power of illusion of, 700; Pratardana as ally of, 787; prepares for siege, 540, 576;—to leave for forest, 165–75;—troop leaders to attack Laṅkā, 577–78; *purohita(s)* of (*see* *purohita(s)*: of Rāma); Puṣpaka and, 722, 789–90, 822 (*see also* Puṣpa/Puṣpaka(vimāna)); questions Vibhiṣaṇa about Kumbhakarna, 613; rage of, at loss of Sitā, 336–38, 843–44; rages against earth goddess (Vasudhā), 843–44; Raghu as ancestor of, 36; Rāvaṇa and (*see also* Rāvaṇa); Rāvaṇa hears of death of Khara, Dūṣaṇa, and Trīśiras by, 300;—reviles, 303, 466, 469;—vows to destroy, by abducting Sitā, 13, 303–4; Rāvaṇa's appearance impresses, 604; reaches Laṅkā, 577; rebukes Lakṣmaṇa, 331–33; recognizes Lava and Kuśa as his sons and Sitā's sons, 10, 19, 841; as refuge of all, 214, 338, 549, 552, 605, 613, 636, 675, 830, 854; refuses to enter Kiṣkindhā, 379–80; regards world as empty, 844; rejects Sitā as unfaithful, 707; releases Rāvaṇa's spies, 556, 563; reminds Kausalyā of wifely duty, 24, 157–58; removes and breaks Rāvaṇa's javelin, 687; repudiates and rejects Sitā, 15, 706–707; rescues Sitā from Virādha, 267; residence of, on Mount Prasravaṇa (Mālyavān), 381; resumes trappings of royalty, 723–24; reunion of, with queen mothers, 723;—with Sitā, 705–11; as role model, 5, 17; romantic interlude of, with Sitā in *aśoka* grove, 790–91; royal lineages established by, 799; Śabarī welcomes, and Lakṣmaṇa, 348; sacrifices of, 17–19, 191;—*agniṣṭoma* and *atirātra*, 845;—*aśvamedha* (*see aśvamedha*);—*paunḍarika*, 726;—performed by, for thousands of years, 845;—*vājapeya*, 726, 845; sages assembled at court of, 728, 807, 844; Sampātī assists, 24, 418; *sandhyā* rites of, 137, 182–83, 187, 223,

270, 544, 829; Śārdūla describes capture of spies and forces of, 563–64;—describes, to Rāvaṇa, 564; Śātrughna and (*see* Śātrughna); saves Sitā from crow, 492–93, 496;—recalled, 533–34; sees omens, 330–33, 576, 695;—vision of Indra, 267; sends Sugrīva back to Kiṣkindhā, 788–89;—Lakṣmaṇa and Sitā into hiding, 291;—Lakṣmaṇa to confront Indrajit, 661;—Lakṣmaṇa to exhort Sugrīva, 386–87;—Śātrughna to fight and kill Lavaṇa, 17–18, 809–10;—Śātrughna back to Madhurā, 18, 819–20; sets out for Mount R̥ṣyamūka, 56, 352; shatters lance of Rāvaṇa with javelin, 691; sight of, will allay grief, 219; signet ring of (*see* signet ring); simulacra of head and bow of, 564–68; Sitā begs, for golden deer, 310–11;—exhorts Lakṣmaṇa to find, 313–14;—implores, to take her to Daṇḍaka forest, 161–63;—laments believing, dead, 566–67, —laments recalling, 473–75, 477–78; Sitā rebukes harsh treatment and accusations of, 707–708;—refuses to touch male other than, 491;—takes ring of, 14, 487, 522;—warns, of perils of violence, 271–72; Sitā’s devotion to, 442, 460, 462–63, 464, 465, 467, 477, 491, 524, (*see also* Sitā); slaying of Khara’s army by, recalled, 52, 300, 301, 327, 460, 677; as son of Aditi, 849; sons of, as disciples of Vālmiki, 6, 10, 17–18, 57, 839–41;—as reflections of Rāma, 840;—perform the *Rāmāyaṇa* for Rāma, 19, 58, 839–41;—Vālmiki teaches, the *Rāmāyaṇa*, 6, 10, 57 (*see also* Kuśa; Lava); splits seven sāla trees as demonstration of skill, 363–64;—recalled, 366, 393; stoicism of, 11; story of, known to Vālmiki, 56–57; stuns Mārica with arrow, 10, 83, 306; suffering of, 798; Sugrīva challenges, to split *sāla* trees, 53, 363–64;—consoles, 357–58, 530–31;—enumerates monkeys to, 396;—narrates conflict with Vālin to, 13, 26, 359–63, 408;—promises to search for and recover Sitā, 13, 357;—reassures, 537–38; Śuka and Sāraṇa describe, to Rāvaṇa, 556–57, 561; Sumantra delivers message of, to Daśaratha, 192–94; summons Sitā to assembly, 841–43; as Supreme Being, Lord, Soul, or Spirit, 4, 20, 475, 709–12 790; Śūrpaṇakhā asks Rāvaṇa to kill, 301;—seduces, 12, 33, 284–85; takes no wife after Sitā, 845; teases Śūrpaṇakhā, 285; tells story of Ila/Ilā story, 833–37;—of Nimi, 802–5;—of Nṛga, 800–802;—of Yadu, 805–7; threatens cosmic destruction, 337–38; tours Citrakūṭa and Mandākinī with Sitā, 232–34;—travels from Laṅkā to

Ayodhyā from Puṣpaka with Sitā, 715–16; unable to distinguish Vālin from Sugrīva, 364–65;—to find and recover Sitā without Sugrīva, 25; Vālin rebukes for killing, 26, 369–70;—begs forgiveness from, 372; Vasiṣṭha instructs, and Sitā prior to the consecration 136; Vibhiṣaṇa advises, to solicit aid of Samudra, 553;—lends Puṣpaka to, 31, 713–14;—takes refuge (*śaraṇam*) with, 31, 549, 551–52; visits Agastya’s brother, 275–76;—Atri, 259–63;—visits Śarabhaṅga, 268;—Sutikṣṇa, 52, 56, 269–71, 274–75; Viṣṇu’s bow and, 127–28; Viśvāmītra gives weapons-spells to, 10, 80–81;—requests aid of, 10, 71–75, 305; vital points (vitals) of, pierced by Indrajit’s arrows, 584–85; vow of, to annihilate Sitā’s abductor, 511;—to Kāla, 848, 850–51; vows to kill Rāvaṇa, 687;—to kill Vālin, 13, 25, 53, 359, 361, 486;—to protect seers of Daṇḍaka forest, 271, 273;—weapon-spells of, 561, 588, 653, 676;—deployed against Indrajit, 654–55;—deployed against Kumbhakarna, 626–627;—deployed against Rāvaṇa, 684, 685, 689–90, 692–93, 698;—weapons of, take on human form, 853; welcomes Durvāsas, 850; wears clothing of ascetic, 11, 170, 171 (*see also* barkcloth garments); will go to Brahmaloaka, 54, 799; world regarded as empty by, 844; Yudhājit dispatches Gārgya as messenger to, 845–46 Rāma Jāmadagnya, 11; as *avatāra* (incarnation) of Viṣṇu, 21; encounter with, with Rāma 126–28; exterminates kshatriyas, 126–27; obeys father’s command to kill mother, 154 Rāmākathā (“Tale of Rāma”), 3; representations of Śūrpaṇakhā in, 33 Rāmarājya: Gandhi on, 42; Rāma inaugurates, 5–6, 16; as utopian reign, 17–18, 42 Rāma story: foretold, 422;—recalled 284, 316–17; 329, 355, 480–82, 510;—Rāma recaps, during return journey, 715–16 *Rāmāyaṇa*: as cautionary tale, 5, 41; as cultural work, 47; consecration of Rāma ends some versions of, 16; Jain versions of, 5n, 36; legacy of, 41–43; as morality play, 5; political history of, 35; popularity of in religious cultures of Asia, 5(n); reception of, 20; in religious history of Hinduism, 40; versions of, 3, 4, 5, 7, 9–10, 16, 19, 27, 33, 36, 37, 42, 43, 46–47; *See also* Vālmiki *Rāmāyaṇa* Rambhā (*apsaras*): Indra sends, to seduce Viśvāmītra, 115–16; Kubera Vaiśravaṇa curses Virādha because of, 267; Nalakūbara confirms story of, 767; Rāvaṇa rapes, 766–67; reports rape to Nalakūbara, 767; Viśvāmītra curses, 118

Rambha (monkey troop leader): arrival of, in Kiṣkindhā, 397; lives in Sahya mountains, 558; number of troops of, 397, 558–59, 574, 587, 622

*Rāmcāritmānas*, 43

Rāmlilā: reenacted annually in India, 6

Rāmopakhyaṇa (“The Secondary Narrative of Rāma”): as version of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 36

rape: of Ahalyā, by Indra, 774; of *apsaras* Rambhā by Rāvaṇa, 766–68; of Arajā by Daṇḍa, 827–28; common to all men, 774

Rasātala (underworld), 53, 92, 356, 517, 546, 569, 655, 817; Hanumān pushes Mount Ariṣṭa into, 517; *rākṣasas* flee to, 731, 740, 744, 817; Rāvaṇa goes to, 760–61;—goes to, recalled, 545;—prepares to go to, 757; Sitā enters, 843; sons of Sagara tear up, 92; Sumālin and advisors come up from, 744; Sumālin leaves, 740. *See also* Pātāla Raśmīketu (*rākṣasa*), 443, 547; Rāma fights and kills, 581

Rati (goddess of pleasure): Sitā compared to, 315; wife of god of love, 315, 459

Rāvaṇa: abducted women curse, 16, 30, 762–63; abducts daughters of serpents, *yakṣas*, *rākṣasas*, men, *daityas*, and *dānavas*, 5, 16, 762–63;—Sitā, 12–15, 24, 52, 320–27, 355, 357, 429; accuses Mālyavān of treachery and humiliates him, 572; acquires epithet, “Rāvaṇa,” 30, 752;—ninety-nine powers of illusion, 761; admonishes Mārica, 307–8; Agastya narrates genealogy and history of, 16–17, 729–82; aims javelin at Vibhiṣaṇa, 686; alliance of, with Nivātakavacas, 761;—with Vālin, 26, 782; alternative title of poem foregrounds, 3, 57, 354; Anaraṇya curses, 16, 756; Aṅgada tells Sāmpātī about fight of, with Jaṭāyus, 417–18;—attacks palace of, 579; appearance of, impresses Rāma, 604; approaches and meets Sitā in ashram, 315–17; Arjuna Kārtavīrya defeats, 16, 26, 30, 780;—fights and captures, 779–80;—fights ministers of, 778–79;—Rāma, fights Rāvaṇa, 608–9, 684–85, 687, 689–98; asks Brahmā for immortality, 743;—Mārica to aid in abduction of Sitā, 52, 303–4;—guise of brahman ascetic, 13, 314–17;—true form, 319–20; attempts to lift mountain 30 35, 363; austerities of, 29, 299, 444, 742–43; bathes in Narmadā, 776; battles gods, 768–73;—Kubera and *yakṣas*, 749–51; begs Kumbhakarṇa to drive off the enemy army, 615;—to save him, 616–17; birth of, 28–29, 741;—accompanied by dire omens, 28–29;

boasts of his power to Sitā, 318–19, 754; boon of, 10, 24, 68–69, 74, 636–37, 649, 742–43, 745, 768, 772, 779; Brahmā grants boon to, 68, 74;—protects, from Yama, 760;—stops auto-decapitation of, 299, 742–43;—tells, to release Indra, 773;—proposes alliance between, and Nivātakavacas, 760–61;—restores heads of, 743;—tells Yama not to strike, 760; briefs Kumbhakarṇa on battle, 615; brings abducted women to Laṅkā, 763; broods upon hearing the sound of the monkey army, 570; cannibalism of, 330, 468, 474, 754;—of ministers of, 748, 778; cannot be slain without an ally, 392; challenges Vālin to battle, 781; charriot battle of, with Rāma, 689–98, 695–98; chariot of, fashioned through power of illusion, 320; claims Prahasta has beheaded Rāma, 565; comes to abode of Varuṇa, 761; conquers city of Aśmanagara, 761;—Kubera, 318, 446, 299, 545, 749–51;—the serpents, 760; as conquistador, 5, 749–51, 755–56, 758–62, 768–73; consecration of, as lord of *rākṣasas*, 745–46; consults his ministers, 544–45, 564; cremation of, 720; crimes of, 299; cursed to die on account of a woman, 16, 762; cuts off heads as offering, 299; Daśagrīva, “Ten-necked,” as birth name of, 30, 752; death of, 3, 5, 15, 21, 30, 53, 56, 698; deeds of, recounted, 545–46; defeat of, presaged in Trijaṭā’s dream, 476; defeats Indra and the gods, 773; defiler of sacred rites, 5; delighted with Indrajit, 586; delusion of, 693; description of palace complex of, 443–46, 453;—of wives and consorts of, 29–30, 446–450; descriptions of, 27–30, 299–300, 448–49, 509, 604; 673; destroys Nandana and other gardens, 748–49; Dhānyamālinī diverts, from Sitā, 470; dismissal of, in battle by Rāma, 15, 30, 609; dispatches *rākṣasa* leaders Dhūmrākṣa and Akamaṇa, 594, 596;—Prahasta, 745;—*rākṣasas*, 327–28;—spies, 555–56, 562; distressed at revival of Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 594; diverted by Dhānyamālinī, 470; does not die from multiple beheadings, 697; drinking hall of, described, 451; each of monkeys vows to kill, 407; effigy of, burned at Rāmlilā, 6; elements fear, 68, 315, 318–19, 776; encounter of, with Vālin, 16, 26, 27, 30, 370, 781–82; encounters Nandīśvara, 751; enemy of Indra, 69; enlists aid of Mārica, 13, 303–09;—Madhu as ally, 766; enmity

of, with Kubera, 29, 742–51; exchanges words and blows with Hanumān, 605–6; excoriates Vibhīṣaṇa, 31, 548 exhausted in battle, 609, 693–94, 773; faints at news of Kumbhakarṇa's death, 628; falls at Sitā's feet, 521;—into stupor, 672; fate impels, 52, 318, 329, 548–49, 629, 679, 693; feats of, described, 299; feeds slain messenger to *rākṣasas*, 748; fells monkey champions, 605; fights and fells Nīla, 606–7;—sons and grandsons of Varuṇa, 761–62;—Sugrīva, 605; fights and kills Anaraṇya, 755–56;—Anaraṇya, 756; fights and vanquishes Marutta, 754; Nivātakavacas;—760; serpents, 760; fights Arjuna Kārtavīrya, 775–79;—Indra, 771–73;—Jaṭāyus, 322–23;—Jaṭāyus, recalled, 417–18;—Kubera, 573;—Lakṣmaṇa, 607–8;—Vaiśvasvata, 757–60;—Yama, Kāla, and Mr̥tyu, 757–60; final battle of, with Rāma, 695–98; foresees his own destruction, 579; forges nonaggression pact with Arjuna, 780; fraternal conflict of, with Vibhīṣaṇa, 26, 29, 548, 741; from flying chariot, views earth, 302–3; funerary rites of, 28, 30, 34, 702; genealogy of, 74, 731–41; gifts Kumbhakarṇa jewels and garlands, 620; gives Śūrpaṇakhā in marriage to Vidyujihva, 746;—ultimatum to Sitā, 468, 521; gods complain to Brahmā about, 68;—eager for destruction of, 254;—etc., incarnate as monkeys to aid in defeat of, 24, 70–71; goes forth to war with Mahodara, Mahāpārśva and Virūpākṣa, 679; goes to Bhogavatī, 760;—Kāilāsa, 299, 545, 749–51; Maṇimatī, 760;—Rasātala, 760–61; goes with Mārīca to Rāma's ashram, 52, 309; grief of, 594, 603, 610, 628–29, 640, 651, 672–74, 683; in guise of brahman mendicant praises Sitā in sexual terms, 13, 315–16; Hanumān brought before, 14, 508–9;—dazzled by splendor of, 509;—fears Sitā might mistake him for, 479;—fights and stuns, 608;—observes closely, 464;—reports his confrontation with, to monkeys, 523;—reviles, 14, 510–12;—searches inner apartments of, 56, 452–53, 520, 531–32, 546, 452;—searches palace of, 442–45; sees, 449, 451;—vows to bind and bring, 430;—warns, of destruction, 511;—urges, to return Sitā to Rāma, 511–12; Hanumān's destruction of *aśoka* grove enrages, 499; harasses divine beings, 747; has *rākṣasa* women take Sitā to see Rāma's body, 587; has Vidyujihva show illusory

head of Rāma to Sitā, 565–66; hears of Akampana's (1) death, 599;—hears of death of Khara, Dūṣaṇa, and Trīśiras, 300; holds forth on types of men, 544–45; holds Sitā captive, 13, 330–705; hurls lance at Rāma, 691;—javelin at Vibhīṣaṇa, 686; in guise of brahman ascetic, 314–17; in guise of mendicant, assumes true form, 319–20;—of mendicant, praises Sitā in sexual terms, 13, 315–16;—reveals identity to Sitā, 317; Indra requests Viṣṇu to kill 10, 768; inhabits Laṅkā as lord of, 745, 746, 747, 748, 757; inner apartments of, 23, 33, 327–28, 450, 452, 466, 470–71, 472, 747, 572, 699, 765, 782; intones *mantras*, 776; invincibility of, through boon, 10, 24, 68–69, 74, 636–37, 649, 742–43, 745, 768, 772, 779; invokes the serpent weapon-spell of the *rākṣasas*, 690; invokes weapon-spell of the *asuras*, 684;—weapon-spell of Maya, 685; invulnerability of, to supernatural beings, 10, 743; Jain representations of, 36; Jaṭāyus admonishes, 321–22;—challenges, to battle, 321;—destroys flying chariot of, 322–23;—reviles, 321–23;—fights, 322–23; javelin, Maya gives to, 691;—of Indra shatters lance of, 691;—of, forged by Maya, 686; of, Rāma removes and breaks, 687;—of, strikes down Lakṣmaṇa, 686–87; justification for his evil nature, 28; Kaikasi counsels, with ministers, 570;—incites sibling envy of, 29, 742; kills four hundred Kālakeya *daityas*, 761;—husband of Śūrpaṇakhā, 29, 763;—messenger of Kubera, 748;—monkeys, 679–80;—troops of Yama, 758–59;—Vidyujihva, 29, 33, 763; Kubera half-brother of, 29, 742, 744; Kumbhakarṇa lectures, on statecraft (*nitiśāstra*), 31, 615–16; laments for Indrajit, 672–73;—for Kumbhakarṇa, 629; liberates condemned souls, 758; lineage and adventures of, 74, 728–82; makes Dūṣaṇa chief of Khara's army, 763; makes his first sortie, 603; Mālyavān advises, to make peace, 571–72; marches to Madhu's city, 765; Mārīca foretells death of, 306;—rebukes, 308–9;—tells, of his past encounters with Rāma, 305–7;—urges, to consult with Vibhīṣaṇa, 305;—warns, 52, 304–6; marries Mandodari, 746;—Śūrpaṇakhā to Vidyujihva, 746; master of weapon-spells, 738; Maya forges javelin for, 686;—gives, Mandodari in marriage, 545; meaning of epithet of, 30; meets Meghanāda in the Nikumbhilā grove, 764;—Nārada, 756;

Rāvaṇa (*continued*)

ministers flatter, 545–46; ministers of, 744, 749, 751, 752, 758, 761, 765, 769, 776, 778, 781–82;—battle guardians of the underworld, 758;—boast of their abilities, 546–47;—kill sons and grandsons of Varuṇa, 761;—reassure, of safety, 545–46;—report death of Indrajit to, 672;—slaughter Arjuna's ministers, 778 (*see also* Dhūmrākṣa; Mahodara; Mārīca; Prahasta; Sāraṇa, Śuka); mocks Mahodara, 619;—Nandiśvara, 751; molests Vedavati, 21–22, 752–54; mortally wounds Jaṭāyus, 13, 24, 323, 341; Mṛtyu asks to kill, 759; Nalakūbara curses, 16, 767–68; Nandiśvara curses, 16, 24, 751–52; Nārada praises valor of, 756; Niśākara foresees abduction of Sītā by, 422; number of forces of, six million, 573; number of subjects of, more than three hundred twenty million, 328; objects to Meghanāda's sacrifices, 764; offering of, to Śiva, 776; offers heads as oblations, 299, 742;—Sītā sovereignty over Laṅkā, 328; omens appear at birth of, 29;—presage defeat of, 695; on the nature of kings, 307; only two mortal beings ever defeat, 26; oppresses gods and sages, 10, 69;—kshatriyas, 752;—the three worlds, 74; orders capture of Indra, 772;—construction of sleeping chamber for Kumbhakarṇa, 747;—Dhūmrākṣa to lead a sortie, 594;—Hanumān paraded through Laṅkā, 513;—Hanumān's execution, 511;—Hanumān's tail set on fire, 513;—Indrajit into battle, 653;—Khara to rule the Daṇḍaka forest, 763;—*kiṃkaras* to capture Hanumān, 499;—Kumbhakarṇa to march forth accompanied by an army, 620;—Mahodara, Mahāpārśva and Virūpākṣa, to send forth more troops, 678;—Mārīca to take form of golden deer, 303–4, 308;—Prahasta to lead a sortie, 599;—Prahasta to question Hanumān, 510;—*rākṣasa* women to pressure Sītā, 470;—*rākṣasa* women to guard Sītā, 327, 330;—*rākṣasas* to awaken Kumbhakarṇa, 610;—*rākṣasas* to capture and kill Aṅgada, 579;—Vidyujihva to create illusion of Rāma's severed head and his bow, 564; places Sītā in *aśoka* grove under guard of fearsome *rākṣasa* women, 330; plans to conquer three worlds, 757;—the world guardians, 757; popular representations of, 42; positions *rākṣasa* chiefs to defend Laṅkā, 572; power of, 299; power(s) of illusion of, 341, 545–46, 685, 693, 696, 751, 761;

praises Vālin, 782; prepares to go to Rasātala, 757; presses Rāma hard in battle, 690; proclaims victory over Yama, 760; Pulastya orders Arjuna to release, 779–80; Puṣpaka(vimāṇa) of, described, 445–46 (*see also* Puṣpa/Puṣpaka(vimāṇa): Rāvaṇa); questions Śuka and Sāraṇa, 557; radical opposite of Rāma, 28; rage of, at death of Indrajit, 673; *rākṣasa* women report Hanumān to, 499; Rāma destroys *rākṣasa* army of, 15, 676;—deploys weapons spells against, 684, 685, 689–90, 692–93, 698;—dismisses, from battle, 15, 30, 609;—kills, 15, 698;—orders funeral of, 30, 702;—orders Sugrīva to search for and kill, 358, 380, 398–99;—praises, 702;—sends warning to, via Śuka and Sāraṇa, 556;—shatters lance of, with javelin, 691;—vows to kill, 687; Rāma's expression of fraternal feelings for, 30, 702;—treatment of, 30, 609, 702; rapes *apsaras* Rambhā, 766–68; ravages heavenly gardens, 747; realizes his failures, 28, 616;—the fortunes of war have turned against him, 681;—that Lakṣmaṇa is a portion of Viṣṇu, 608; recalls his vulnerability to humans, 609; receives intelligence on the forces of his enemy, 557–61; redirects huge javelin at Lakṣmaṇa, 686; refuses to return Sītā, 563, 570, 572; regrets his failure to heed advice of Vibhīṣaṇa, 629;—his treatment of Vibhīṣaṇa, 629; resolves to destroy Rāma by abducting Sītā, 13, 304;—to kill Sītā, 673; reviles Rāma, 303, 466, 469;—Śuka and Sāraṇa, 562;—Vibhīṣaṇa as a traitor, 548; riddles Mātali with arrows, 690; rushes upon Sītā with sword drawn, 674; Saṃpāti (vulture) reveals identification and location of, 418–19; scorches monkeys with Tāmasa weapon-spell, 683; seeks alliance with Madhu, 545;—counsel from *rākṣasas*, 544–45; sends Akampana into battle, 596;—Akṣa and an army to capture Hanumān, 503–4;—his brothers Mahodara and Mahāpārśva to guard sons, 630;—Indrajit against Hanumān, 506;—Jamumālin to fight Hanumān, 499–500;—Khara and Dūṣana to Daṇḍaka forest, 763–64;—*kiṃkaras* against Hanumān, 499; Kumbha and Nikumbha into battle, 647;—Makarākṣa to kill Rāma, 651;—*rākṣasas* to isolate and kill Rāma, 675;—seven sons of minister against Hanumān, 501;—sons off to battle, 630;—Śuka and Sāraṇa to spy on Rāma and monkey army, 555–57;

—Śūrpaṅakhā to Daṇḍaka forest, 33, 763–64; severed heads of, reappear, 697; sexual predator, 5, 21, 28; shows Sītā his palace, 328;—illusion of Rāma’s head and bow, 565–66; Sītā admonishes, 467–68;—foretells destruction of, 474;—foretells doom of, 329–30;—offers hospitality to, 316;—rebukes, for abduction, 325–26;—rejects advances of, 317–19;—reviles, 318–20, 326, 329–30, 467–69; Śiva crushes arms of, under mountain, 30, 752;—gives name, “Rāvaṇa,” to Daśagrīva, 752;—pleased with, 30, 752; sons of, offer to take up the battle, 630;—engage in great battle with monkeys, 631;—set out with a vast host, 630–31; speaks Sanskrit like a brahman, 479; spies report to, 564; steals Puṣpaka, 299, 545, 751; strikes Hanumān with arrows, 609; strikes down Indra’s horses, 690;—Lakṣmaṇa with javelin, 686;—Lakṣmaṇa with lance, 408;—Lakṣmaṇa’s arrows, 683–64;—and defeats Kubera, 751; stuns Hanumān, 606; subjugates Kubera, 545; Sugrīva sends out monkeys to search for, 398–408;—vows to kill, 357, 392; Sampāti (vulture) reports witnessing abduction by, 419–20; Supārśva (*rākṣasa*) dissuades, from killing Sītā; Śūrpaṅakhā asks, to kill Rāvaṇa, 301; describes Rāma, Lakṣmaṇa, and Sītā to, 300–301;—incites, to take revenge, 300–302;—reports death of Khara and Dūṣaṇa to, 299;—reports events in Daṇḍaka forest, 299–30;—reproaches, 763; Śūrpaṅakhā’s report enrages, 300; surveys Rāma’s army, 557; takes possession of Laṅkā, 744–46, 757; takes Sītā to and shows Laṅkā, 327–28; tears up Śaravana, 752; tells Hanumān to return Sītā, 511–12;—Sītā Rāma is dead, 565; ten heads of, 741; terrorizes worlds, 5, 299, 742; “thorn (in the side) of the world (*lokakaṇṭhaka*),” 18, 69; threatens to kill Sītā, 14, 330, 468–69; threatens Mārīca, 32, 308; tries to kill Sītā, 674–75; tries to woo Sītā, 328–29, 465–67; Trijaṭā foretells downfall of, 475–76; unable to lift Lakṣmaṇa, 608; unable to pass over place of Śiva’s dalliance, 751; Vālin captures, 26, 30, 781; Vedavati refuses to curse, 753; Vibhiṣaṇa advises, to return Sītā, 547–48;—dissuades, from Hanumān’s execution, 512–13;—performs funerary rites for, 30, 701–2; visits Mārīca, 303;—Sītā in *aśoka* grove, 463–70; Viṣṇu incarnates to kill, 10, 69–70, 710; Viśravas curses, 16, 29, 33, 741;—to avenge the deaths of kinsmen, 678;—to conquer

heaven, 765;—to destroy Rāma by abducting Sītā, 13, 303–4;—to equal or surpass Kubera, 29, 742;—to kill Madhu, 765;—to kill Rāma, 13, 327, 675;—never to give up Sītā, 557;—to subjugate Indra, 765; weapons of, infused with power of illusion, 696; weapon-spells of, 758; wives and courtesans of, described, 446–52;—sympathize with Sītā, 468, 470; woos Sītā, 320; 328–29, 465–66; worships golden *liṅga*, 776; wounds Jaṭāyus, 323  
*Rāvaṇavadha*: also known as *Bhaṭṭikāvya*, 41  
Rāvaṇi. See Indrajit  
Ravi. See Sūrya  
Rçika: husband of Satyavati, 86; sells his son Śunahṣepa, 113; and Śunahṣepa story, 113–14; Viṣṇu gives bow to, 127  
rebirth. See reincarnation  
recensions: of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 7–9, 40, 44, 45  
recitation (*parāyaṇa*). See *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*: recitation of  
reincarnation: Vedavati as, of Sītā, 21, 753–54.  
See also birth(s)  
religious history: of Hinduism in *Mahābhārata*, 40;—in *Rāmāyaṇa*, 40  
Reṇukā (mother of Rāma Jāmadagnya): Rāma Jāmadagnya kills, 154  
righteousness (*dharma*), 5, 17, 20, 27, 40, 164, 167, 177, 850. *passim*; adherence to, by Rāma, 11; consists in speaking truth, 659; discourses on by Kumbhakarna, 615–16; by Lakṣmaṇa, 658–60; by Mālyavān, 570–72; by Rāma, 238–41; 272–73; 370–72, *passim*;—by Sītā, 270–72; by Vālin, 369–70; as highest form of compassion, 493; of kshatriyas, 154, 271–73; of Kuśanābha’s daughters, 85; meanings and translations of, 46; as quality of Rāvaṇa. 567;—of Viṣṇu, 709; not shown by Nimi toward Vasiṣṭha, 805; as the very essence of this world, 272; virtues of, 85, 369; of women, 157–58, 161, 162–63, 172, 197, 109, 260; in *yuga* theory, 37  
ring. See signet ring  
rites: *abhijit*, 68; *agnihotra*, 28, 87, 104, 105, 119, 174, 189, 211, 229, 262, 268, 306, 567, 571, 741, 786, 853; *agniṣṭoma*, 567, 764, 845, 853; for ancestors, 124, 249; *aptoryāma*, 68; *atirātra*, 67, 68, 645, 845; *āyus*, 68; *bali*, 105; benedictory, 678, 748; birth, 813; for funerals (see funerary rites); *gosava*, 845; *homa*, 105; *jyotiṣṭoma*, 68; lunar, 271; morning, 284; *śrāddha*, 213, 215, 275–76; *vājapeya*, 178, 726, 845; *viśvajit*, 68; water libations as, 76, 87, 283, 379, 419. See also *aśvamedha*; sacrifice(s); *vaiṣṇava* sacrifice

- ritual consecration: golden image of *Sitā* as fit for, 838; of *Marutta*, 754; of *Nimi*, 802, 804, 805. *See also* royal consecration
- ritual offerings, 66, 84, 87, 105, 111, 263, 264, 435, 641; crows eat, 419, 492
- Ṛkṣa*: cave of, 56
- ṛkṣa(s)*: *Jāmbavān* king of, 27; in later versions interpreted to be a bear, 27; rendered as ape, 47. *See also* apes
- Ṛkṣarajas*: adoptive father of *Sugrīva*, 350, 563, 624, 786; adoptive father of *Vālin*, 786; king of the mountains, 786; monkey lord, 417, 786; prohibits entrance into *Madhuvana*, 528; son of *Sūrya*, 346
- roadbuilding, 216–17, 721
- rod: of doom, 639; of *Kāla*, 749, 759–60, 769;—*Brahmā* creator of, 760; of *Mṛtyu*, 322, 546; of punishment, 264, 452, 512, 578, 826–27;—king wields, 264; of *Yama*, 108, 650, 801, 803, 829
- Rohiṇī* (consort of the moon), 256, 285, 315, 320, 392, 459, 463, 464, 481, 490, 496, 674, 690, 701, 703, 720; example of wifely obedience, 260
- Rohiṇī* (daughter of *Surabhi*): mother of cows, 280
- Rohitas* (clan of *gandharvas*): guard forest of *Ṛṣabha*, 402
- role: of *Agastya* in *Uttarakāṇḍa*, 16–17, 19, 26, 29; of *Śatrughna* in epic, 23; of *Śūrpanakhā* in epic, 33
- role model(s): characters in *Rāmāyaṇa* as, 5, 20, 37; *Daśaratha* as, 13; *Rāma* as, 5, 17; *Sitā* as, 22, 42
- Romapāda* (king of *Aṅga*), 61, 63, 64, 66; ministers of, 61–2; *purohita(s)* of (*see purohita(s)*): of *Romapāda* not named)
- royal consecration: *Ayodhyā* readied for *Rāma*'s, 136–38; of *Aṅgada* as crown prince, 380–81; of *Aṅgada* and *Candra-ketu*, 847; of *Kuśa* and *Lava*, 851–52; of *Pūru* by *Yayāti*, 807; priests prepare for *Rāma*'s, 146–47; of *Rāma* as king, 16, 725–26; of *Rāma* ends some versions of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 19; *Rāma* wishes for *Bharata*, 851; of *Rāvaṇa* as lord of *rākṣasas*, 745–46; of *Śatrughna*, 809–10; of *Śatrughna*'s sons *Śatrughātīn* and *Subāhu*, 852; of *Sugrīva*, 360, 379–80; of *Śveta*, 825; of *Śveta*'s brother, 825; of *Vasu*, 801; of *Vibhiṣaṇa* as king of *Laṅkā*, 15, 31, 552, 561, 702–3; *Vaṣiṣṭha* urges *Bharata* to undergo, 218. *See also* ritual consecration
- royal duty. *See rājadharmā*
- Ṛṣabha* (monkey troop leader), 540–41, 584, 587, 605, 622, 722; appointed to guard army's right flank, 540; brings water for *Rāma*'s consecration, 725; fight and kills *Mahāpārśva* (younger brother of *Rāvaṇa*), 635; *Kaikeyī* embraces, 722; *Kumbhakarna* crushes, 623; member of the southern search party, 400; one of “five tigers among monkeys,” who rushes *Kumbhakarna*, 623; posted at southern gate, 577
- Ṛṣabha* (mountain), 399, 643, 645; sandalwood grows on, 401–2
- ṛṣi(s)* (*seer[s]*): omniscient vision of, 4, 39
- Rṣyamūka* (mountain), 356, 358, 354, 361, 365; ashram of *Maṅga* on, 408; located east of *Pampā*, 347; *Hanumān* goes from, to *Malaya*, 356; *Rāma* and *Lakṣmaṇa* set out for, 56, 352; *Rāma* meets *Sugrīva* on, 510, 523; *Sugrīva* dwells on, 346, 347, 349–50, 352, 358, 485;—recalled 677; *Vālin* cursed not to enter, 363–64, 408
- Rśyaśṛṅga*: performs *aśvamedha*, 10, 66–68; performs son-producing sacrifice, 10, 68–69; seduction of, 61–63; sets out with *Śāntā*, 71; travels to *Āyodhyā*, 63–64
- Ṛtadhāman*: *Rāma* as, 709
- Rudra*: *Rāma* as, 709. *See also* *Śiva*
- Rudras*, 280, 315, 403, 455, 481, 709, 768, 770, 771, 842
- rum, 451, 646
- Rumā* (wife of *Sugrīva*), 374, 392, 408, 416, 454; daughter-in-law of *Vālin*, 371; recovered, 381; *Sugrīva* embraces, 391
- Śabalā* (wish-fulfilling cow): as gift of *Nṛga*, 800–801; provides offerings to ancestors, 105; of *Vaṣiṣṭha*, 105–6
- Śabarī* (ascetic woman): asceticism of, 347–48; ashram of, 348; immolation and ascent of, to heaven, 349; *Kabandha* directs *Rāma* to ashram of, 53, 346–47; meeting of *Rāma* with, 53, 56, 348–40; social status of, 41; welcomes *Rāma* and *Lakṣmaṇa*, 348
- Śacī* (*Paulomī*): *Anuhlāda* abducts (comparison), 396; daughter of *Puloman*, wife of *Indra*, 396–97, 490; *Indra* abducts, 308, 319; *Jayanta* son of, 770; lord of (*see* *Indra*); stolen from *Indra*, 319
- sacrifice(s) (*yajñas*), 10, 32, 29; of *Ambariṣa*, 113–14; of *Bali*, 424; of *Dakṣa*, 292, 338; to a home, 191; of *Ila*, 837; of *Indra* (*see* *Indra: aśvamedha* of; *see* *Indra: performs vaiṣṇava sacrifice*); of *Indrajit* (*see* *Indrajit: sacrifice(s)*) of *Janaka*, (*see* *Janaka: sacrifice* of); for *Maheśvara*, 395; of *Marutta* (*see* *Marutta: aśvamedha* performed by; *Marutta: sacrifices* to *Śiva*); of *Mitrasaha* (*see* *Mitrasaha Saudāsa: sacrifice* of); of *Nimi* (*see* *Nimi: Gautama*

- performs sacrifice for); offerings from, not reused, 196; *rākṣasas* engage in, 440, 443; *rākṣasas*' portion at, 176; of Rāma, 17–19, 845, (see also Rāma: sacrifices of); ritual, 40; of Sāgara (see Sāgara: *aśvamedha* sacrifice of); son-producing, of Brahmadaṭṭa, 86;—of Daśaratha, 10, 68–70; of Triśaṅku (see Triśaṅku: Viśvāmītra performs sacrifice for); vedic, 10, 32; vedic, in Laṅkā, 443; of Viśvāmītra (see Viśvāmītra: sacrifice[s] of). See also *agniṣṭoma*; *aśvamedha*; *bahusuvārnaka*; *maheśvara*; *rājasūya*; rites; *vaiṣṇava* sacrifice
- Sāgara (king of the Ikṣvākus), 122, 252, 432, *passim*; *aśvamedha* sacrifice of, 91–92; boon of, 90; sons of, 90–96—Kaikēyī recounts story of, to Daśaratha, 170; obey father's command, 154; story of, 90–94; unable to bring Ganges to earth, 96
- Sāgara (Samudra) (god of the ocean): appears before Rāma, 554; proposes that Nala should construct a bridge, 554; Rāma assaults, 553–54;—causes to manifest, 553–54;—petitions, 553;—solicits help of, 553; seeks to aid Hanumān, 432–33; urges Maināka to rise from ocean, 433; Vibhiṣaṇa advises Rāma to solicit help of, 553. See also ocean
- sages. See ascetic(s)
- Sahya (mountains), 541; monkey army marches through, 542; Rambha and troops live in, 558
- Śaibya, 200; gives body to hawk, 145; promises body to brahman, 145
- Śailūṣa (king of *gandharvas*), 402; sons of, protect country of *gandharvas*, 845; Vajrajvāla daughter of, 747
- Śakas: northern quarter location of country of, 404; produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 107
- Śakra. See Indra
- sāla* tree(s): branch of, used as seat, 358; splitting of seven, by Rāma, 53, 363–64;—recalled, 366, 393; as weapon, 368
- Sālakaṭaṅkaṭā: daughter of Sandhyā, 732; wife of Vidyutkeśa, 732
- Śālmali (river), 204
- śālmali* or *śālmali* (tree), 326, 352, 546, 667. See also *kūṭaśālmali* tree
- Sāmaga (brahman who chants Sāmaveda), 383
- Śambara (*asura*), 460, 629, 649, 759, 768; also called Timidhvaja, 141; Indra fights, 141. See also Timidhvaja
- Śambasādana (*asura*), Kesarin kills, 487
- Śambhu. See Śiva
- Śambhu (king of *daityas*), 753, 759
- Śambūka (*śūdra* ascetic), 16; austerities of, 18–19, 822; birth of, as *śūdra*, 822; execution/killing of, by Rāma, 18–20, 41, 822–23; Nārada (minister) informs Rāma about, 18, 821–22
- Samhāras (weapon-spells), 75
- Samkāśyā: capital city of Kuśadvaja, 121
- Samkocana (mountain), 557–58
- Sampāti (minister of Vibhiṣaṇa), 573, 734
- Sampāti (vulture): Aṅgada distressed upon seeing, 416–17;—narrates story of Rāma to, 417–18; arrives to place where southern search party is fasting, 416; boon to, from Niśākara, 412; discovers death of brother Jaṭāyus, 417; elder brother of Jaṭāyus, 14, 24, 416–17; falls to Vindhya mountains, 422; fights Prajāṅgha, 581; grief of, 417; informs southern search party of Rāvaṇa's and Sitā's location, 14, 24, 418–20; Jaṭāyus and, make wager on Kailāsa, 421; monkeys do not trust, 417; prophecy of new wings for, by Niśākara, 422; provides assistance to Rāma, 24, 418; restoration of wings of, 423; saves southern search party from fasting to death by revealing Sitā's location, 14, 418–20; scolds Supārśva, 423; southern search party desires, as food, 416; story of, and Jaṭāyus, 418, 421–22; story of meeting with Niśākara narrated to Aṅgada by, 420–22; Supārśva son of, 419, 420; Suṣeṇa wants to send to ocean of milk, 591–92; tells Aṅgada of fight between Jaṭāyus and Rāvaṇa, 417–18; tells Aṅgada his own history, 420–23; water-libations of, for Jaṭāyus, 419–20; wings of, burned by sun, 418
- Samrāt (Universal Emperor): as title, 35
- Samudra. See Sāgara
- Samvarta (brahman sage/seer): said to officiate at Marutta's sacrifice, 817; urges Marutta not to fight, 754
- saṃvarta* (weapon-spell): Bharata kills *gandharvas* with, 846; of Kāla, 80
- Samyodhakaṅkaṭa (*yakṣa*): Rāvaṇa attacks and defeats, 749
- Sanat Kumāra: tells Daśaratha story of Ṛṣyaśṛṅga, 61, 63
- sandalwood: *gośirṣa*, 390; *hariśyāma*, 390; *padma*, 390
- Sandhyā (goddess of twilight): Sālakaṭaṅkaṭā daughter of, 732

*sandhyā* rites, 458, 828; evening, 200, 212, 223, 270, 276, 544; morning, 137; propriety of women performing, 458; of Rāma, 182–83, 187, 270, 276, 544, 829; of Suyajña, 165; of Vālin, 781–82

Śaṅkara. *See* Śiva

Sanskrit: *anuṣṭubh* common meter of, 8; brahmanical usage of, 479; difficulties in translation of, 44–47; Hanumān speaks to Sitā in, 479; Ilava disguised as brahman speaks, 275; language of humans, 479; *Mahābhārata* composed in, 8; scribal transmission of manuscripts composed in, 7; *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa* composed in, 3

Śāntā: marriage of, to Rśyaśṛṅga, 61, 63; travels to Ayodhyā, 64

Santāna(s) (heavenly world[s]): next to Brahmaloaka, 854

Saptajanās (group of seven sages): ashram of, 364–66. *See also* seven seers

Śarabha (minister of Vibhiṣaṇa), 573

Śarabhaṅga (sage), 270; ashram of, 298, 716, 720; attains Brahmaloaka, 268; austerities of, 267; becomes a youth again, 268; boon of, 268; directs Rāma to Sutikṣṇa, 268; explains Indra's visit to Rāma, 268; Rāma meets, 52, 267–69; Virādha directs Rāma to, 267

Śarabja (monkey troop leader): declares prowess in jumping, 424; one of the five tigers among monkeys, 623; one of the five sons of Vaivasvata, 564

Saramā (*rākṣasa* woman): aids Sitā, 33, 568–70; birth of, 747; etymology of name of, 747; foretells Rāma's victory, 569; spies for Sitā, 569–70; wife of Vibhiṣaṇa, 747

Sāraṇa (minister of Rāvaṇa), 443, 749, 769, 776, 778; monkeys capture, 556; Rāma releases, 556; Rāvaṇa rebukes and humiliates, 562, Rāvaṇa sends, to spy on monkey army, 555–56; reports to Rāvaṇa on monkey troops, 556–57; spies for Rāvaṇa, 777; takes on the form of monkey, 556

*sārasa* crane(s) (*krauñca*[s]), 87, 182, 233, *passim*; Niṣāda kills male of mating pair of, 9, 54

Sarasvatī (goddess of speech), 31, 398, 709; Brahmā summons, to enter speech of Kumbhakarṇa, 31, 743–44; Vedavatī as incarnation of, 753

Sarasvatī (river), 398

Sarayū (river), 38, 58, 64, 66, 76, 91, 182, 198, 199, 213, 234, 283, 383, 398, 851; Asamañja drowns children in, 81, 170; etymology of, 77; Lakṣmaṇa closes off

senses on banks of, 851; Rāma and followers enter its waters, 854–55; Rāma enters blazing power of Viṣṇu at, 854

Śārdūla (*rākṣasa* spy): advises Rāvaṇa, 563; declares impossibility of spying on Rāma's forces, 563; describes capture of spies and Rāma's forces, 563–64;—Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 564; names monkey leaders and their divine parents, 564; spared by Rāma, 563

*sarga* (chapter), 6, 10, 45, *passim*

Śarmiṣṭhā: as *daitya*, 805; daughter of Vṛṣaparvan, 805; mother of Puru, 805; favored wife of Yayāti, 805

Śatruṃjaya (elephant), 165–66, 724; Daśaratha's aged elephant, 236

Sārvabhauma (elephant): mount of Kubera, 405, 540, 635

Śatabali (monkey troop leader), 560, 587, 788; arrives in Kiṣkindhā, 397; fails to find Sitā, 409; leader of northern search party, 404, 407; number of troops of, 541, 580

Śatahradā: mother of Virādha, 266

Śātānanda, 112, 841; *purohita* of Janaka, 102–3, 120–21

Śātānanda: son of Gautama, 103; tells story of Viśvāmitra and Vasiṣṭha, 103–17

Śatrughātīn (son of Śatrughna son): consecration of, 852; established in Vaidīśa, 852

Śatrughna, 10, 58, 149, *passim*; accompanies Bharata to Rājagṛha, 130, 204; aids Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 724; attacks Mantharā, 23, 215; and Bharata inseparable, 123; birth of, 71; boon of, 817; character synopsis of, 23; childhood of, 72; as co-*avatāra*, 22; consecrates sons, Subāhu and Śatrughātīn, 853; desires to follow Rāma to heaven, 852; devoted to Bharata, 72; etymology of name of, 815; fights and kills Lavaṇa, 17–18, 815–17; founds Madhurā (Mathurā), 18, 23, 818; founds Śūrasenā, 817; gains city of Madhupurī as residence, 817; greets Rāma, Lakṣmaṇa, and Sitā, 722–23; grief of, 214, 222–23, hears of births of Lava and Kuśa, 813; hears recitation of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 18, 58, 818–19; laments Rāma and mourns Daśaratha, 213–14; makes preparations for consecration of Rāma, 721–25; marries Śrutakīrti 123, 125; messengers report events in Ayodhyā to, 852; prepares highway for Rāma's return, 721; *purohita* of, Kāñcana, 852; —unnamed, 818; questions Cyavana about Lavaṇa, 814; Rāma asks Bhadrā about, 791;—consecrates, in Madhurā,

- 809–10;—dismisses, 18, 819–20;  
—dispatches to kill Lavaṇa, 17–18,  
809–10;—gives, arrow of Viṣṇu, 810;  
—informs, of intention to abandon Sitā,  
792–94;—sends back to Madhurā, 18,  
819–20; requests Rāma to deal with  
Lavaṇa, 809; resides in Madhupurī  
(Suraseṇā), 817–18; returns to Ayodhyā,  
18, 818–19, 852;—to Ayodhyā with Bha-  
rata, 206; role of, in epic of, 23; sets  
forth to kill Lavaṇa, 811; spends night  
in Vālmiki's ashram, 18, 812, 818;  
Śrutakīrti wife of, 125; Sumitrā mother  
of, 71; twin brother of Lakṣmaṇa, 18,  
71; youngest brother of Rāma, 18, 23;  
Yudhājit takes, to his home, 130
- Satyavati: sister of Viśvāmitra, 86; trans-  
formed into Kauśikī River, 86; wife of  
Ṛcika, 86. *See also* Kauśikī
- Saudāsa. *See* Mitrasaha Saudāsa
- Saumanasa (mountain peak): made of gold,  
400
- Saumanasa (one of the elephants who sup-  
port the earth), 93
- Saumanasa (spell): Viśvāmitra intones and  
gives Rāma, 81
- Saumitri. *See* Lakṣmaṇa
- Savitra: eighth among Vasus, 769; fights and  
kills Sumālin, 769
- Sāvitrī: as example of wifely obedience, 163,  
260
- Sāvitrī *mantra*, 853
- sayings, popular. *See* proverbs
- seer(s): 29, 32, 52, *passim*; of Citrakūṭa inform  
Rāma of the presence of *rākṣasas*, 258–59;  
collectively known as *ṛṣis* or *kavis*, 39;  
omniscient vision of, 4, 39; tell Bharata  
to agree to Rāma's request, 254. *See also*  
ascetic(s); Saptajanas; seven seers
- self-immolation: as a means of suicide,  
454. *See also* ordeal by fire; Sitā: fire  
ordeal
- semen: eaten and released by Agni, 88;  
porridge as, 70; retention of, by Cūlin,  
85; of Śiva, 88; Vasiṣṭha enters, of Mitra  
and Varuṇa, 803
- serpent(s), 29, 70, 74, *passim*; arrows of  
Indrajit become, 592 (*see also* serpent-  
weapons); as battle standard of Prahasta,  
600; Bhogavatī city of, 299, 401, 437, 439;  
chariot of Rāvaṇa encircled by, 770;  
drank nectar, 738; Garuḍa (Tārṣya)  
defeats, 756 (*see also* Garudā); Kadrū  
mother of, 281; live in Rasātala, 760;  
Rāvaṇa abducts daughters of, 762–63;  
—conquers, 545, 760;—wishes to conquer,  
757; *rākṣasas* use as mounts, 736, 765,  
771; Surasā mother of serpents, 280,  
434, 519; throne of Dharaṇi emerges  
from earth on heads of, 843. Vāsuki,  
lord of, 299, 401, 760; *See also* Takṣaka;  
Vāsuki
- serpent-chariot: of Sumālin, 769
- serpents, five-headed. *See* five-headed  
serpents
- serpent-weapons: of Indrajit Rāvaṇi, 24, 32,  
584, 592; of Rāvaṇa, 689–90
- seven seas, 348–49, 583, 697
- seven seers (sages), 67, 112, 158, 349, 365,  
765, 728. *See also* ascetic(s); Saptajanas
- sexual predator: Rāvaṇa as, 5
- shadow(s): Aṅgārakā captures, 401; *asuras*  
capture, 399; of Hanumān, 431, 432;  
Siṃhikā captures, 436, 520
- shape-shifting (taking form at will): of Akṣa,  
504; of Añjanā, 425–26; of arrows, 583,  
592, 690; of *asuras*, 275–76; of divine  
weapons, 80; of Dundubhi, 362, 408;  
of Ganges, 89, 95; of Garuḍa, 468; of  
gods, 10, 754; of Hanumān, 429, 435–36,  
438–39, 498, 500, 561, 598, 718; of  
Himālaya, 362; of Indra, 91, 100–101,  
272, 700; of Indrajit, 584 ; of Jaṭāyus  
and Sampāti, 421; of Kabandha, 344; of  
Kubera's forest, 227–28; of Kumbhakarṇa,  
620–21; of Maināka, 433; of Mārica,  
13, 32, 304, 309–19, 306, 313–16, 325,  
330–31, 333; of monkeys, 38, 70–71,  
397, 538, 556, 558, 560, 574–75, 579,  
580, 685, 722, 724; of *rākṣasas*, 273,  
337, 373, 465, 483, 498–99, 581, 584,  
651, 676, 704, 812–13; of Rāma's bow  
and arrows, 690, 853; of Rāvaṇa, 13,  
319, 459, 473, 479, 483, 578, 696, 700;  
of Sampāti, 421; of serpents, 468, 584,  
592; of Siṃhikā, 436; of Sugrīva, 346;  
of Śuka and Sāraṇa, 556; of sun, 490,  
477; of Surasā, 434–35, 520; of Tāṭakā,  
78; of Tumburu, 266–67; of Vātāpi,  
275, 865; of vedas, 853; of ministers of  
Vibhīṣaṇa as birds, 573; of Viṣṇu, 10,  
40, 69, 82, 91–94, 801, 832, 849, 866;  
of Yama, 373, 379, 571, 848; of Yama's  
rod and war hammer, 759–60
- shawl of Sitā: dropped, 357; found by  
monkeys, 357; Sugrīva shows Rāma, 357
- sibling rivalry: among monkeys, 24;  
between Rāvaṇa and Kubera, 29, 741;  
between the sons of Diti and Aditi, 742,  
744. *See also* fraternal conflict; Sugrīva:  
enmity of, with Vālin
- Siddhārtha (minister of Daśaratha), 60, 170,  
204
- Siddhārtha Gautama, 36

signed ring: Hanumān gives, of Rāma to Sitā, 487, 522;—gives, of Rāma to Sitā recalled, 522; Rāma gives, to Hanumān, 14, 27, 56, 407, 522

*śimha* birds: live on slope of Himagiri mountain, 402

Śimhikā: catches Hanumān's shadow, 436; Hanumān encounters and kills, 436; Rāhu son of, 784; shape-shifting of, 436  
simile, extended (*mālopa*): of Ahalyā, 102; of arms of Rāvaṇa arms, 449; of arrows of Rāma, 628, 698;—of arrows of Rāvaṇa, 605;—of arrows of Viṣṇu, 737; of *aśoka* grove of Rāvaṇa, 456–58; of Ayodhyā, 256; of Bharata's chariot, 256–57; of Daśaratha's corpse, 202; of the earth, 421; of Hanumān, 431, 504; of Kumbhakarṇa, 611, 620–21; of Laṅkā, 646; of moon, 439, 441; of ocean, 543; of palace of Rāvaṇa, 444–45; of *rākṣasas*, 738; of Rambhā, 766; of Rāvaṇa, 318, 448–49, 451, 509, 469, 609; 605; of Sitā, 442, 459, 462–65; of Sitā's face, 244, 324; of a stream, 457; of trees, 430–431; of women of Rāvaṇa's inner apartments, 447–48, 449–50

simulacrum, Indrajit Rāvaṇi creates, of Sitā, 655–56; of Rāma's head and bow produced by Vidyujjihva, 564–68; —vanishes at Rāvaṇa's departure, 567

Śīśira (weapon-spell): of Soma, 80

Śīśira (mountain), 399

Sitā, 10, 12, 13, *passim*; abandonment of, by Rāma, 6, 17–19, 794–978; abduction of, by Rāvaṇa, 12–15, 24, 30, 32, 52, 56, 320–27;—by Rāvaṇa Brahmā witnesses, 324;—by Rāvaṇa foreshadowed, 30;—by Rāvaṇa creatures seem to mourn, 325;—by Rāvaṇa crow foretells, 351; —by Rāvaṇa Jaṭāyus attempts to stop, 13, 321–23;—by Rāvaṇa as pivotal event of poem, 12;—by Rāvaṇa recalled, 355–57; 413, 434, 482, 519–20, 787; —by Rāvaṇa rumors arise about, 793; —by Rāvaṇa Supārśva witnesses, 420; —by Virādha, 12, 32, 265–67;—by Virādha recalled, 460, 677;—Rāvaṇa plots, 303–4; accuses Lakṣmaṇa of treachery, 13, 313–14; Agastya praises, 278–79; age of, at exile, 317; Agni brings, out of the fire unsinged, 710;—instructs Rāma to take back, 710;—testifies to fidelity of, 710; Analā relates information to, 489; Anasūyā gives gifts to, 261; asceticism of, 464, 469, 513; ashamed of being seen in public, 706; asks Lakṣmaṇa to rescue Rāma, 313; Rāma to capture golden

deer, 13, 310–11;—Saramā to spy on Rāvaṇa, 569; asserts fidelity to Rāma, 708; auspicious omens of, 478, 481; begs Hanumān to stay in Laṅkā, 495;—Rāma for golden deer, 310–11; birth of, from a furrow, 21, 118, 261, 461, 753–54, 843; Bhadra tells Rāma rumors about, 791–92; blames self for misfortunes, 475, 493;—for suffering, 704; bodily signs of, 587–88; born for the destruction of *rākṣasas*, 678; braid of, 459, 465, 473, 478, 518, 524, 532, 569; bride price of, 118, 120, 123; captivity of, 327–30; 459–99, 516, 566–67, 587–89;—recalled, 531–32. . character synopsis of, 12, 21–22; compassion of, 34, 272, 704; contemplates suicide, 473–74, 477–78; conversation of, with Hanumān, 480–97; cries out for help, 320–21; crow foretells abduction of, 351; daughter of earth goddess, 11, 118, 843; declines Hanumān's offer to carry back to Rāma, 490–92; defies *rākṣasa* women, 471–74; denies knowing Hanumān, 498–99; describes own auspicious marks, 588–89; description of, 260, 272, 459–65, 588–89; desires to visit ascetics' ashrams, 791, 793–94; devotion of, to Rāma, 442, 460, 462–63, 464, 465, 467, 477, 491, 524; disapproves of going to Daṇḍaka forest, 272;—of killing *rākṣasas*, 272, 704; Dharaṇi/Mādhavi descends to Rasātala with, 19, 843; discovery of, saves Rāma from unrighteousness, 537; dropped ornaments of, monkeys find, 485; drops ornaments, 357;—Jaṭāyus sees, 418;—shawl, 326–27, 357; dwells in Pañcavaṭi with Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 12, 281–83; eats meat, 791; elements grieve for, 325; enters Daṇḍaka forest with Rāma, 12, 52, 56, 264;—Rasātala, 19, 843;—the fire, 708; etymology of name of, 118; exhorts Hanumān, 494–95;—Lakṣmaṇa to find Rāma, 313–14; fasting of, 422, 459, 465, 483, 518, 521, 544; fears Hanumān, 481–83;—Rāma and army will be unable to cross the ocean, 495;—Rāma will make love to other women, 478;—Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa have been killed, 477; fears of, 474–75, 477–78; fire does not burn, 516, 710; fire ordeal (*agniparikṣā*) of, 15, 17, 708, 710–11, 793; foretells destruction of Laṅkā, 474;—destruction of Rāvaṇa, 330, 474; foster daughter of Janaka, 11, 21, 118, 708; as foundling, 11, 21, 118, 843; gives birth to Lava and Kuśa, 17, 813; gives Hanumān hair ornament, 56, 494;—message for Rāma, 496–97;—pearl

necklace, 726; golden image of, 18, 838; grief of, 16, 324, 326, 382, 329, 420, 458–52, 462–65, 471–75, 477–79, 481–83, 486–87, 489–92, 495–97, 511, 513, 523–24, 544, 566, 587–89, 619, 705, 797; grief of Rāma at separation from, 334–336, 339, 349, 351–52, 355, 357–58, 381, 385–87, 393, 485–86, 488–89, 530, 537–38, 543–44;—of Rāma over abandonment of, 794, 799–800;—of Rāma over false report of death of, 658, 661;—of Rāma over return of, to mother, 843–44; hair ornament of, 56, 494, 497, 532, 534; Hanumān consoles, 14, 459–97, 516, 482–83, 495;—describes Rāma to, 484–85;—devotee of, 27;—discovers, 14, 53, 56, 459–60, 462;—encounters, 480–97, 516–17;—exhorts, 494–95;—fears he has burned, 515;—fears, is dead, 452, 453–54;—fears, might take her own life, 479;—gives signet ring of Rāma to, 14, 27, 487;—gives signet ring of Rāma to recalled, 522;—mistakes Mandodari for, 450;—offers to carry, back, 14, 491;—ponders danger of revealing himself to, 479–80;—reassures, 487–90, 495–96;—searches for, in Laṅkā, 14, 439–59;—searches for, in Laṅkā, recalled, 531–32, 782;—speaks to, in Sanskrit, 479;—takes no other wife than, 845;—tells Rāma, is found, 531–32;—tells Rāma's story to, 480;—tells Rāvaṇa to return, 511–12;—tells Rāvaṇa Sītā got lost in forest, 510;—terrorizes *rākṣasa* wardresses of, 498–99; inauspicious omens presage abduction, 314, 324, 330–31, 333;—presage abandonment, 794; as ideal wife (*pativrata*), 5, 22, 478; implores Rāma to take her to the Daṇḍaka forest, 161–63; Indra gives food to, 422; in inner apartments of Rāvaṇa, 327, 328, 619, 452, 532, 553, 710; innocence of, 19, 513–14, 710–11, 842–43;—as object of scandal among people, 792–93;—Rāma orders, publicly proven, 710; instructs Lakṣmaṇa to build her a pyre, 708; Janaka finds, while ploughing (*see* Sītā: birth of, from a furrow *this entry*); Jaṭāyus attempts to save, 13, 24, 52, 322–23;—tells Rāma of abduction of, 340–41;—vows to watch over, 281; joy of, at learning of Rāma's victory, 703–4; as Kālarātrī, 511, 566; Lakṣmaṇa builds a pyre for fire ordeal of Sītā, 708;—builds hut for Rāma and, in Pañcavaṭī, 282;—consoles Rāma over, 335, 338–40, 381–82, 386, 800;—guards, 312;—leaves,

unprotected, 13, 314, 331;—refuses to gaze upon, 21;—seeks recourse in cave with, 291;—urges Rāma to search for, 338–39; laments, 473–75, 477–78;—for Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 587–88;—over simulacra of Rāma's head and bow, 566–67; leaves Āyodhyā with Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 11, 172–74; love of Rāma for, 129; Mārica as golden deer entices, 13, 310–11; marriage of, to Rāma, 11, 123–25;—recalled, 262; meets with Anasiyā, 56, 259–63; monkeys find jewelry of, 357;—plan to rescue, 525–26;—report on condition of, 531–32;—search for, 408–23;—witness abduction of, 326–27; oath of purity of (*see* Sītā: truth-act of *this entry*); pearl necklace of, 325; places straw between herself and Rāvaṇa, 459, 467; power of austerities of, 469; praises Hanumān, 487; pregnancy of, 17, 791, 796; prehistory of (*see* Vedavati); prepares to hang herself with her braid, 478; prophecy of abduction of, by Niśākara, 422; protected by her own virtuous conduct, 516; questions Hanumān about Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 487–89; *rākṣasa* women aid, 28, 33, 475, 568–70, 589;—cajole and threaten, 14, 33, 330, 470–72, 477;—guard, 327, 328;—take, to battlefield in Puṣpaka, 587;—tell, of Hanumān's punishment, 513; Rāma abandons (*see* Sītā: abandonment of, by Rāma *this entry*);—agrees to take, to forest, 164;—asks Jaṭāyus to protect, 312;—asks Lakṣmaṇa to protect Sītā, 312;—exhorts Sugrīva to search for, 358;—gives, pearl necklace, 726;—grieves for Sītā (*see* Sītā: grief of Rāma at separation from *this entry*);—has Lakṣmaṇa abandon, 794–97;—describes hardships of forest to, 161–62;—hears rumors about, 792;—informs Sītā of exile, 159–60;—laments for, 13, 333–35, 385, 543–44;—marries (*see* Sītā: marriage of, to Rāma *this entry*);—orders to Vibhiṣaṇa to bring, 705;—promises to capture golden deer for, 13, 311–12;—rage of, at loss of;—336–38, 843–44;—recognizes sons of, 10, 19, 841;—rebukes Lakṣmaṇa for leaving, 331–33;—repudiates and rejects, as unfaithful, 15, 706–7;—reunion of, with, 705–11; saves Sītā from crow, 492–93;—saves Sītā from crow recalled, 533–34;—sends Lakṣmaṇa and, into hiding, 291;—romantic interlude of, with, in *aśoka grove*, 790–91;—summons to assembly, 841–43;—tells, of need to use

Sītā (continued)

violence, 273;—tests true feelings of, 164; vows to annihilate abductor of Sītā, 511; Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa rescue, from Virādha, 267; *Rāmāyaṇa* as Great Tale of, 3, 57; Rāvaṇa abducts (see Sītā: abduction of, by Rāvaṇa *this entry*);—approaches in guise of ascetic, 13, 314–17;—falls at feet of, 521;—gives ultimatum to, 468, 521;—hears history of, 316–17;—offers, sovereignty over Laṅkā, 328;—praises beauty of, 315–16;—refuses to give back, 563, 570, 572;—reveals identity to, 317;—reveals true form to, 319–20;—shows Laṅkā to, 328;—takes, to Laṅkā, 327;—terrifies, by violent approach, 674;—threatens, 330, 468–69;—visits, in *aśoka* grove, 463–70;—woos, 320; 328–29, 465–66; Rāvaṇa’s wives encourage, 468; rebukes *rākṣasa* women, 471–74;—Rāma, 163, 707–8;—Rāvaṇa, 467–68;—Rāvaṇa for abduction, 325–26; recounts crow episode, 492–93;—her history to Hanumān, 481–82; reduced to tears by Rāma’s cruel words, 707; refuses Hanumān’s offer of rescue, 14, 490–92;—Hanumān’s request to kill *rākṣasa* women, 704;—Rāvaṇa’s advances, 467;—to eat during captivity, 422;—to touch any male other than Rāma, 491; regrets refusing Hanumān’s offer to rescue, 674; rejects Rāma’s accusations, 707–8;—Rāvaṇa’s advances, 317–18, 319; reviles and warns Rāvaṇa, 317–19, 325–26, 329–30, 467–69; as role model, 22, 42; rumors about, 17, 792, 795, 800;—Rāma hears, 792;—Rāma tells brothers of, 792; Sampāti informs southern search party of location of, 14, 24, 418–20; Saramā aids, 33, 568–70; sees Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa wounded, 587; silk shawl of, 326, 357; southern search party, with Hanumān, will find, 409; sons of Lava and Kuśa, 10, 19, 813; Sugrīva dispatches monkeys to search for, 13, 402–7;—instructs Hanumān to find, 406; Śūrpaṇakhā attacks, 12, 285;—describes, to Rāvaṇa, 301; Sutikṣṇa directs, to visit ashrams of Agastya, 276–79; takes Rāma’s signet ring from Hanumān, 14, 487;—Rāma’s signet ring from Hanumān, recalled, 522; tells Anasūyā about birth and marriage, 262; Hanumān crow episode, 492–93;—Hanumān of Rāma’s exile and her abduction, 481–82;—story of sword-wielding ascetic, 272; thinks Hanumān is an illusion, 481–82;—is Rāvaṇa, 482;

tours Citrakūṭa with Rāma, 232–34; Trijaṭā reassures, 589;—tells dream to, 475–77; from Laṅkā to Ayodhyā in Puṣpaka with Rāma, 715–16; truth-act of, 19, 513–14, 843;—Hanumān, unburnt through, 513–14; urges compassion for the wicked as well as the good, 704;—Rāma to abjure violence, 272; *Uttara-kāṇḍa* refers to ordeal by fire of, 793; Vālmiki shelters and consoles, 17, 797–98; Vedavati reincarnates as, 21–22, 753–54; Vibhiṣaṇa advises Rāvaṇa to return, 547–48;—enters inner apartments of Rāvaṇa to find, 705;—brings, to Rāma, 705–6;—conveys Rāma’s instruction to, 705;—declares the killing of, to be illusion, 660;—has Sītā mount palanquin, 705;—orders passage of, cleared of moneys, apes and *rākṣasas*, 705–6;—orders, come in full view of the public, 706; visits Agastya, 276–79;—Agastya’s brother, 275–76;—Śarabhaṅga, 268;—Sutikṣṇa’s ashram, 269–71, 274–75; wants Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa to discard weapons, 272; warns Rāma of perils of violence, 271–72;—Rāvaṇa of Rāma’s vengeance, 468; wears barkcloth garments, 170–71; welcomes Rāvaṇa in guise of an ascetic, 316; wishes Rāma would renounce kingship for ascetic life, 272;—to accompany Rāma into exile, 11, 161–64;—to see Rāma, while unbathed, 705; wives of Daśaratha welcome, 128; wonders why Rāma has not rescued her, 474–75; words of Rāma wound, 707

Śiva (Bhava, Hara, Mahādeva, Maheśvara, Paśupati, Rudra, Śambhu, Sthāṇu), 11, 16, 29, 96, 126, 732, 733, 736, 833–34, 837, *passim*; asceticism of, 89; asks gods who will bear his semen, 88; austerities of, 89; bow of, 117–19, 127;—Rāma breaks, 11, 13, 119;—unstrung by Viṣṇu, 127; burns Kāma, 76–77; checks fall of Ganges, 95; crushes Rāvaṇa’s arms under mountain, 752; denies god’s request to kill sons of Sukeśa, 735; “Destroyer” as part of Trimūrti, 35; fights Viṣṇu, 127; friendship of, with Kubera, 748;—with Rāvaṇa, 30, 752; gender transformation of, 833; gives bow to Devarāta, 127;—Daśagrīva the name “Rāvaṇa,” 752; gods take refuge with, 735; grants boon of manhood to Ila, 837;—to Hanumān, 786;—Ila any boon but manhood, 834;—boons to Indrajit, 764;—knowledge of weapon-

- spells to Viśvāmitra, 107;—lance as boon to Madhu, 808, 811;—boons to Sukeśa, 732–33; Kubera pleases, 748; lance of Lavaṇa returns to, 817; lord of Umā, 736; marries Pārvatī, 88; partial to Sukeśa, 735–36; pleased with *aśvamedha* of Ila, 837; presents heavenly spirit of Daśaratha to Rāma, 711; presses down Śaravana with big toe, 752; promises the gods woman would bring about his destruction, 678; Rāma breaks bow of, 11, 13, 119;—compared to, 292, 298, 455, 647, *passim*; Rāvaṇa lifts up mountain, sitting on, 752; worships *liṅga* of, 776; releases Ganges into Lake Bindu, 95; semen of, generates Kārttikeya, 88; story of marriage of, and Pārvatī, 87–88; story of, and Pārvatī and Ila/Ilā, 833–34; tells gods to seek refuge with Viṣṇu, 735–36;—Rāma to perform *aśvamedha*, 711; thanks Rāma for ridding world of Rāvaṇa, 711; weapon-spells of, 626, 684, 764, 758
- size of Hanumān. *See* Hanumān: size of, changeable
- Skanda (Mahāsena), 158, 740, 833; Agni as father of, 560; birth of, 88–90; etymology of name of, 90; Śravaṇa birthplace of, 751; wielder of the javelin, 740
- sky: fifth path in, that of vultures, 419; first path in, that of *kulīṅgas*, 419; fourth path in, that of falcons, 419; highest path in, that of sons of Vinatā, 419; second path in, that of crows, 419; sixth path in, that of *haṃsas*, 419; third path in, that of *krauñcas*, kites, and ospreys, 419
- sleep: of Kumbhakarna, 31, 610, 744, 747
- śloka*, 55; etymology of word, 55; type of meter, 8, 55; type of verse, 8, 55, 391; word for poetry, 55
- social classes (*varṇas*): in Ayran society, 40–41
- social status: of Guha, 41; of Śabarī, 41
- Solar Dynasty (Sūryavaṃśa), 25, 36. *See also* genealogy: of Ikṣvākus
- Soma (moon god), 36, 158, 251, 276, 307, 709, 830, 839; ashram of, 404; Budha son of, 835–36; Dadhimukha son of, 564; Purūravas grandson of, 836; Śisīra weapon-spell of, 80
- Somadā (*gandharva* woman): mother of Brahmadata, 86–87
- Somagiri (mountain in northern ocean), 405
- Somavaṃśa (Lunar Dynasty), 36
- son(s): of Aditi, 97–98, 280, 744 (*see also* Aditi; *āditya(s)*); of brahman, death of, 18, 820;—restored to life, 18, 823; of Diti, 97–98, 280, 744, 760, 833 (*see also daitya(s)*; Diti); lack of, of Daśaratha, 10, 81; of Rāma (*see* Kuśa; Lava); of Sagara, 90–96; of Sītā (*see* Kuśa; Lava); of Vinatā, that of, highest path in sky, 419
- Śoṇā (river). *See* Māgadhi
- southern quarter: Aṅgada, leader of search party of, 27, 400, 407; description of, 400–402; southern search party searches, 409–411; Sugriva dispatches southern search party to, 400–402, 407
- southern search party: adventures of, 13–14;—Hanumān narrates to 413; Aṅgada exhorts, 410;—leader of, 27, 400, 407; decide to fast to death, 14, 414, 417–18;—to return to cave, 414; dejection of, 410–11, 416; despondency of, 417, 423, 425; encounter of, with Svayaṃprabhā, 411–14; enters cave, 411; exhaustion of, 410–11, 413; fails find Sītā, 409; kills *asura*, 409–10; monkeys of, 411; reaches southern shore of ocean, 423; Sampāti desires, as food, 416;—informs, of location of Rāvaṇa and Sītā, 14, 24, 418–20; search southern quarter, 409–11; seeks refuge with Svayaṃprabhā, 413; Sugriva dispatches, to southern quarter, 400–402, 407; Svayaṃprabhā rescues, from cave, 413
- spies of Rāvāṇa. *See* Śārdūla; Sāraṇa; Śuka *śrāddha* rites, 213, 250, 275, 276
- Śrāvati: Rāma finds, for Lava, 852
- Śrī (goddess of royal fortune or beauty), 4, 69, 216, 376–77, 591, 733, 734, 740, 741, 797; Danu son of, 355; Sītā compared to, 129, 177, 190, 261, 315, 333, 460, 466, 544, 570, 572, 705
- Śrīvatsa mark: Rāma as Viṣṇu bears, 709
- Śrīngaverapura: Guha lord of, 182, 256
- Śrutakīrti: marries Śatrugna, 123–25
- śruti*, “what was heard,” 39
- statecraft (*nītiśāstra*): discourses on: 104, 203, 239–241, 488, 510–12, 547–546, 571–72, 677; of Kumbhakarna to Rāvaṇa, 31, 615–16, 619;—of Rāma to Vālin, 370–72; of Vālin to Rāma, 369–70
- Sthāṇu. *See* Śiva
- Sthūlakṣa (*rākṣasa* general): Rāma fights and kills, 291–93
- Sthūlasiras (ascetic): curses Kabandha, 344
- stratagems of kings, 353
- straw: Brahmā’s power in, 493; Sītā places, between herself and Rāvaṇa, 467
- structure of *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*. *See* *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*: structure of
- Subāhu (monkey), 580

Subāhu (*rākṣasa*): obstructs Viśvāmītra's sacrifice 82–83; Rāma kills, 10, 33, 83; Rāvaṇa commands to obstruct sacrifices, 74; Viśvāmītra complains, obstructing sacrifice, 73

Subāhu (son of Śatruugna): Śatruugna consecrates, in Madhurā, 852

Śubhra (*gandharva* lord), 402

Sudāmana (counselor): of Janaka, 121

Sudāmana (weapon-spell): of Tvāṣṭṛ, 80

Sudarśana (elephant): born in Airāvata's lineage, 530; Mahodara mounts, 630

Sudhanvan: Janaka kills, 123

Śūdra (region): monkeys search, 402

śūdra(s) (social class), 18, 19, 40, 41, 54, 60, 199, 402, 477, 822–24.; born from the feet of Manu, 280; forbidden to practice austerities in *tretā yuga*, 822; in list of four social classes, 65, 219, 240, 280, 821, 842; role of, in the *yugas*, 821; Śambūka as (*see* Śambūka)

Sugriva: addicted to sensual pleasures of, 384; adoptive son of Ṛkṣarajas, 350, 563, 624, 786; advice of Hanumān to, 384–85, 389–90; alarmed at Lakṣmaṇa's anger, 390; alliance of, with Rāma, 13, 25, 30, 53, 56, 356–58, 364, 486, 716; —sanctified by fire, 356–58 (*see also* Sugriva: friendship with Rāma); created by gods on Rāma's behalf, 787; Aṅgada announces Lakṣmaṇa's arrival to, 389; —fears imprisonment by, 414, 415–16; Aṅgada and, place Vālin on bier, 378; apologizes to Lakṣmaṇa, 393; assaults Kumbhakarṇa with a mountain, 624; assembles monkeys, 385; assures Vibhīṣaṇa he will be *rākṣasas'* king, 591; blocks Vālin in cave, 360–61; —recalled, 408; challenges Kumbhakarṇa, 624; —Rāma to split *sāla* trees, 53, 363–64; —Rāma to split *sāla* trees, recalled, 366; —Vālin to battle, 364–66; character analysis of, 25; claims army can leap over the ocean, 537; comforts Rāma, 359, 530–31; commander of monkey army, 398, 540–41, *passim*; conciliates Lakṣmaṇa, 393; consecrates Aṅgada crown prince, 380–81; consecration of, in kingship, 360, 379–80; counselors set, in Vālin's place, 786; delays fulfillment of promise, 13; departs from Kiṣkindhā with Lakṣmaṇa 395; derelict in duty, 387–88; describes Vālin, 362; description of abode of, 390–91; de-throned by his brother, Vālin, 485; dispatches monkey army in all four directions, 13, 398–402, 404–7; dwells at Pampā and Mount Rṣyamūka, 346–47,

349–50; enmity of, with Vālin, 13, 26, 359–63, 408, 787; enters abode of Lakṣmaṇa, 391; enumerates monkeys to Rāma, 396; exhorts Rāma to abandon grief, 537; fears Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 353, 359, 716; —Vālin, 346, 349, 353, 359; fights and kills Kumbha, 649–50; —Praghasa (*rākṣasa*), 581; fights Kumbha, 649–50; —Mahodara, 681–82; —Rāvaṇa, 604–5; —Vālin 53, 56, 364, 368; —Virūpākṣa, 680–81; friendship of, with Rāma, 354, 356, 358, 364, 371, 549–50, 590, 725 (*see also* Sugriva: alliance of, with Rāma); friendship of, with Hanumān, 787; *gajapuṣpī* garland of, as identifying sign, 25, 364, 366; —Lakṣmaṇa gives, 364–65; golden necklace of, 561; grief of, 359–61, 379, 408; Hanumān counselor of, 27; —emissary of, 510; —to assist, against Vālin, 783, 787; —introduces Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa to, 356; harsh nature of, 414; holds fly whisk for Rāma's consecration, 724–25; hostility of Vālin with, 787; infers success of southern search party, 529; inflicts punishment, 410, 414, 416, 425, 452, 528; instructs monkeys to search the directions, 13, 398–406; —Śatabali to search foothills of Kailāsa, 405; Kabandha tells Rāma about, 345–46; Kaikeyī embraces, 722; kills Kumbha, 650; —Mahodara, 682; —Virūpākṣa, 680–81; Kumbhakarṇa carries off, 624; Lakṣmaṇa directed by Rāma to find, 350; reviles, 391–92; —threatens, 392; Lakṣmaṇa's anger toward, 387–89, 390, 392; lives on Rṣyamūka, 342, 346, 347, 349, 350, 352, 358, 485; lord of apes, 384, 486; lord of monkeys, 379, 393, 398, 485, *passim*; makes pact with Rāma to kill Vālin, 486; meeting of, with Lakṣmaṇa, 391; —with Rāma, 13, 356; —with Rāma on Mount Prasravaṇa [Mālyavān], 395–96; misfortune of, 357, 359; mistreatment of, by Vālin, 354; mounts elephant in procession for Rāma's consecration, 724; enmity of, with Vālin, 13, 26, 355–63, 408; offers funerary libations for Vālin of, 360; orders Hanumān to meet Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 353–54; —Hanumān to summon monkeys, 394; —monkeys to assemble, 393; —monkeys to storm Laṅkā with torches, 645; —Nīla to assemble monkey army, 385; pardons monkeys for devastation of Madhuvana, 529; portrayed as cruel, impetuous, cowardly, and as a libertine, 25; praises Hanumān, 529;

—Kumbha, offers him respite, 649; promises Rāma to search for and recover Sitā, 13, 357; qualities of, 25; Rāma exhorts, to aid in search for Sitā, 358; Rāma exhorts to search for Sitā, 358; gives, gold diadem, 726;—gives, tribute given to him by kings, 788;—invites to *aśvamedha*, 838;—places his palace at disposal of, 735;—praises, 789;—sends back to Kiṣkindhā, 788–89;—sends Lakṣmaṇa to exhort, 387;—unable to find and recover Sitā without, help of, 25; Rāma’s anger at, 386–87; reassures Rāma of success in mission, 537–38;—that Sitā has been found, 531; receives Vibhīṣaṇa, 575; reconciles with Lakṣmaṇa, 393; recovers wife Rumā, 381; requests help from Rāma, 355, 396; sees destruction of Madhuvana, 528–29; sends Hanumān to meet Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 353–54;—monkeys to search for Sitā, 13;—monkeys to the four oceans for Rāma’s consecration, 725; slaughters principal *rākṣasas*, 680; smashed to ground, escapes, 626; son of Rkṣarajas, 346, 350; son of Sūrya, 71, 346, 355; succeeds Rkṣarajas as king, 786; summoned to *aśvamedha*, 838; Sūrya natural father of, 27, 71, 355; Tārā coveted by, 384; Tārā defends, 392–93;—and, offer funeral libations for, 379; Vālin abducts wife of, 361;—exiles, 11, 25, 345–46, 361;—advises Aṅgada to be submissive to, 376;—elder brother of, and rightful heir, 26, 353, 360;—gives, golden garland, 376;—gives, sovereignty of monkeys, 376;—more powerful than 26;—routs, 364;—takes wife of, 359; Vālin’s anger at, 360–61; waits on brahmins assembled for *aśvamedha*, 838; wife of, 371, 374, 381, 391, 392, 408, 416, 454; wounds Kumbhakarṇa with fangs and claws, 625  
suicide: by fasting, 454; by hanging, 454; by poison, 454; by self-immolation, 454; by weapons, 454; Hanumān contemplates, 455; Rāma threatens, 150; Sitā contemplates, 473–74, 477–78;—threatens, 163–64, 314;—threatens hanging as a means of, 314, 478  
Śuka (minister of Rāvaṇa), 443, 749, 776–78; claims Rāvaṇa is victorious, 754; monkeys capture, 556; Rāma releases, 556; Rāvaṇa deploys to spy, 555–56;—rebukes and humiliates, 562; reports to Rāvaṇa, 556–57; spies for Rāvaṇa, 777; takes on the form of monkey, 556  
Sukeśa: birth of, 732; Devavati wife of, 733; Mālin, Mālyavān, Sumālin sons of, 733;

Śiva grants boons to, 733; sons of, attack the world of the gods, 736–37;—dwell in Laṅkā with their followers, 734;—gods ask Viṣṇu to kill, 735;—harry gods and *asuras*, 733–35;—much more powerful than Rāvaṇa, 740;—none but Nārāyaṇa capable of killing, 740;—practice fearsome austerities, 733;—receive boons from Brahmā, 733;—request Viśvakarman to build mansion for, 733–74 (*see also* Mālin; Mālyavān; Sumālin)  
Suketu (son of Nandivardhana): king of the Ikṣvāku lineage, 122  
Suketu (*yakṣa*): father of Tātakā, 78  
Śūkra (preceptor of the demons). *See* Uśanas Kāvya  
Sumāgadhi (river). *See* Māgadhi  
Sumālin: austerities of, 733; battles gods, 739–40; boons of, 733, 735–36; Devavati mother of, 733; Dhūmrākṣa son of, 734; emerges from Rasātala, 744; flees to Laṅkā, 739–40; Kaikasī daughter of, 734; Kumbhināsī (1) daughter of, 734; leaves Rasātala, 740; Savitra fights and kill, 769; sends Kaikasī to ask Viśravas to marry her, 741; serpent-chariot of, 769; urges Rāvaṇa to seize Laṅkā from Kubera, 744. *See also* Mālin; Mālyavān; Sukeśa: sons of, attack the world of the gods  
Sumantra (minister and charioteer of Daśaratha), 52, 56, 60–62, 64, 66, 147, 170–71, *passim*; brings Bharata back from forest, 253; consoles Kausalyā, 195;—Śatrughna, 214; Daśaratha orders, to bring Rāma, 133–34, 147; delivers Rāma’s message to Daśaratha, 192–94;—Bharata to find Rāma, 218, 219, 232;—Rāma into exile, 173–75;—Sitā to forest, 794–95; fetches Rāma to Daśaratha, 133–34, 147–48, 168; grief of, 185, 191–92, 195; invites participants to Daśaratha’s sacrifice, 65; joins brothers in forest, 242; Kaikeyi orders, to bring Rāma, 146; Lakṣmaṇa extols Rāma’s virtues to, 179; Rāma dismisses, 184–87  
Sumati (1), 99–100; mother of Sagara’s 60,000 sons, 91; wife of Sagara, 90  
Sumati (2): son of Kākutstha, 99–100  
Sumeru (mountain): boon of, 763  
Sumitrā, 230, 238, 243, 473, 477, 488, 589, 590, 711, 712, 714, *passim*; and the death of Daśaratha, 201–2; consoles Kausalyā, 177; Daśaratha gives half of a half of porridge to, 70;—gives remaining porridge to, 70; departs for forest to bring Rāma back, 219; eats celestial porridge, 70; follows Kausalyā to heaven, 845; gives

Sumitrā (*continued*)

birth to two sons, Lakṣmaṇa and Śatru-ghna, 71; instructs Lakṣmaṇa on conduct, 173; Kausalyā and, go to meet Rāma, 721; laments, 211; learns that Rāma will be consecrated as prince regent, 135–36; meets Bharadvāja, 230; meets with Rāma on Mount Citrakūṭa, 243–44; mother of Lakṣmaṇa, 22, 52, 71, 172, *passim*; Rāma respectfully salutes, 723, 725; receives new brides, 128; Śatru-ghna respectfully salutes, 811

sun: burns Sampāti's wings, 418; grows dim during battle between Rāma and Rāvaṇa, 697; Hanumān tries to devour, 426–27, 783; Jaṭāyus and Sampāti fly into, 418, 421–22; wings of Sampāti burned by, 418, 422. *See also* Sūrya

Śunahśepa: story of, 113–14

*Sundarakāṇḍa*, 429–536; *bija* (heart) of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 15; printed separately from *Rāmāyaṇa*, 15; prognosticative text, 15; starting point for recitation of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 15; synopsis of, 14–15

Sundarī (wife of Mālyavān), 734

sun god. *See* Sūrya

Suparṇa: in Sagara story, 94. *See also* Garuḍa  
Supārśva (*rākṣasa*): dissuades Rāvaṇa from killing Sitā, 674–75

Supārśva (vulture): Sampāti scolds, 423; son of Sampāti, 419, 420; witnesses abduction of Sitā, 420

Supreme Being. *See* Viṣṇu

Suptaghna (*rākṣasa*): fights Rāma, 581

Surabhi (Surabhī) (wish-fulfilling cow), 210, 228; children of, 280; grieves for her calves, 210–11; Rāvaṇa observes, 761; supplies milk for Ocean of Milk, 761

Surasā: Kadrū, sister of, 280–81; Krodh-avaśā mother of, 280; mother of serpents, 380, 434, 519; obstructs Hanumān's passage, 434–35;—recalled, 519–20

Sūrasenā (city): Śatru-ghna renames Madhupurī as, 817

Śūrasenas: country in northern quarter, 404  
Sūrāṣṭra, 402, 284–85

Śūrpaṅkhā, 12, 29, 32, 33; admonishes Rāvaṇa, 299–300; appeals to Rāvaṇa's duty as king, 299–300; attacks Sitā, 285; birth of, 28–29, 741; demands Rāma's death, 301; describes Rāma, Lakṣmaṇa, and Sitā to Rāvaṇa, 301; description of, 284, 741; goes to Laṅkā, 298; grief of, 288; inflames Rāvaṇa's passion for Sitā, 301; Kaikasi mother of, 29, 741; Lakṣmaṇa rejects and mutilates, 12, 285–86; lives in Daṇḍaka forest, 764–65; mutilation of,

32, 52, 56, 285–86;—explained to Khara, 286; Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa tease, 285; Rāvaṇa marries, to Vidyujjihva, 746;—questions, 300;—sends, to Daṇḍaka forest, 764;—kills husband of, 29, 763; reports death of Khara and Dūṣaṇa to Rāvaṇa, 52, 299; representations of, in Rāma story, 33; reproaches Rāvaṇa for death of husband, 763; role of, in epic, 33; seduces Lakṣmaṇa, 285;—Rāma, 12, 33, 284–85; taunts Khara taunted by, 288; tells Khara about death of fourteen *rākṣasas*, 288–89;—about Rāma killing *rākṣasas*, 288; tells Rāma about Khara and Dūṣaṇa, 284; Viśravas father of, 28–29, 741;—curses, 33, 741

Sūrya (sun god) (Āditya, Mārtāṇḍa, Vivasvant), 26, 36, 429, 432, 569, 608, 630, 640, 698, 716, 735, 780 784; does not burn Hanumān, 432; father of Rkṣarajas, 346; father of Sugrīva, 27, 71, 355; grants boons to Hanumān, 432, 783, 786;—to Mount Sumeru, 403, 783; Hanumān invokes, 429; Hanumān mistakes for fruit, 783; lord of cows, 650; Rāhu chariot of, 784; refrains from burning Hanumān, 783; son of Kaśyapa, 251; weapon-spells of, 639, 685. *See also* sun

Sūryabhānu (*yakṣa*): disappears, pulverized, 750; pierces Rāvaṇa, 749

Sūryavaṃśa. *See* Solar Dynasty

Suṣeṇa (monkey), 440; member of the southern search party, 400, declares prowess in jumping, 424

Suṣeṇa (monkey troop leader; father of Tārā), 390, 563, 573; *passim*; arrival of in Kiṣkindhā, 397; battles and kills Vidyumālīn, 581–82; father of Tārā, 402, 580, 781; fights and kills Vidyumālīn, 581–82; has Lakṣmaṇa inhale aroma of the healing herbs, 27, 688; leader of western search party, 402, 404, 407, 409; physician of monkeys, 27; reassures Rāma that Lakṣmaṇa is not dead, 687; sends Hanumān once more for healing herbs, 688; tells monkeys about healing herbs on the mountains Candra and Droṇa, 592

*sūtās* (bards), 35

Sutikṣṇa (ascetic): ashram of, 270, 274; austerities of, 270; directs Rāma, to Agastya and Agastya's brother, 275; Rāma, Lakṣmaṇa, and Sitā visit, 52, 56, 269–71, 274–75; Śarabhaṅga directs Rāma to, 268

Suvēla (mountain): Rāma encamps on, with chief monkeys, 574–76; Rāma's army encamps near, 563,–64

Suyajña (minister of Daśaratha), 64

- Suyajña (son of Vasiṣṭha), 165–66, 725
- Svayamprabhā: daughter of Merusāvarni, 412; description of, 411; fasting of, 412; friendship of, with Hemā, 412; Hanumān tells, of search party's adventures, 413; history of, 412; questions Hanumān, 412; rescues southern search party from cave, 413; southern search party seeks refuge with, 413
- Śveta (king): abandons kingship, 824; Agastya gives celestial jewel to, 826; attains Brahmaloḥka, 825; austerities of, 825–26; condemned to eat his own corpse, 825–26; hunger and thirst of, in Brahmaloḥka, 825; story of, 824–26
- Śveta (monkey): son of Sūrya, 564
- Śvetākṣa (guardian elephant [*diggaḥa*]), 280
- sword: Agastya gives, to Rāma, 278; story of ascetic and, 272
- Syandikā (river), 181
- synopsis: of *Aranyakāṇḍa*, 12–13; of *Ayodhyakāṇḍa*, 11–12; of *Bālakāṇḍa*, 9–11; of *Kiṣkindhākāṇḍa*, 13–14; of *Sundarakāṇḍa*, 14–15; of *Uttarakāṇḍa*, 16–20; of *Yuddhakāṇḍa*, 15–16
- taking on form at will. *See* shape-shifting
- Takṣa (son of Bharata): consecration of, in Takṣaṣila, 846
- Takṣaka: Rāvaṇa conquers, 299, 545;—abducts wife of, 299
- Takṣaṣila (city): Bharata founds, 846–47
- Tamasā (river), 179; ashram of Bharadvāja at, 54; citizens of Ayodhyā turn back at, 180; Rāma and Sītā spend first night in forest at, 179; Vālmiki's ashram on banks of, 54–55, 794
- Tāmasa (weapon-spell), Rāvaṇa uses, against monkeys, 683; Viśvāmitra gives, to Rāma, 80
- tāmasī (power of illusion), 764
- Tapana (*rākṣasa*): Gaja fights and kills, 581
- Tāra (monkey troop leader), 365, 390, 622, 411, 415, 787, 788; advises Vālin, 367, 374, 377; arrives in Kiṣkindhā, 397; exhorts monkeys, 373; father of Tārā, 781; fights and kills Kumbhahanu, 601; member of southern search party, 407, 409; minister of Vālin, 781; number of troops of, 397; participates in Vālin's funeral, 378; suggest monkeys return to cave, 414–15; tells Rāvaṇa that Vālin is gone, 781
- Tārā (wife of Vālin) 372; accepts Lakṣmaṇa's advice, 393; chief queen of Vālin, 363; daughter of Suṣeṇa, 376; daughter-in-law of Suṣeṇa, 798; Sugrīva by, 392–93; duty of, toward Aṅgada, 375; fast of, abandoned, 377; fasting to death of, 375; foretells future, 376; gives blessings and *mantras* for Vālin, 368; grief of, 373–77, 379; Hanumān consoles 375; hears information from Aṅgada, 367; instructs Aṅgada, 377; lament for Vālin of, 374, 376–77, 379; protector of monkeys and apes, 375; reader of portents, 376; rejects Hanumān's advice, 375; Sugrīva covets, 384; Tāra as father of, 781; Vālin as source of information of, 392; Vālin rejects advice of, 367–68; as widow, 374, 377
- Tātakā, 10, 32; Agastya curses, 32–33, 78; boon of, 78; originally a *yakṣa*, 33, 78; daughter of Suketu, 78; forest of, 77–78; Mārīca son of, 78; power of illusion of, 79; Rāma kills, 10, 79; wife of Sunda as *yakṣa*, 78
- three-headed cobras, 75, 654
- three-strides of Viṣṇu. *See* Viṣṇu: three strides of
- time. *See* cosmic cycles; cosmic eras; cyclical time; Dvāpara Yuga; Kali Yuga; Kṛta Yuga; Tretā Yuga; *yuga(s)*
- Timidhvaja (an *asura*, also called, Śambara): Daśaratha kills, 141; Indra fights, 141; Rāma kills son of, 177. *See also* Śambara
- Tiṣya: name of a degenerate *yuga* that comes about when unrighteousness eclipses righteousness, 571. *See also* Kali Yuga
- Tiṣya constellation, 517
- trees, golden. *See* inauspicious omens: golden trees presage death
- Tretā Yuga, 18, 22, 754, 821, 824; *Rāmāyaṇa* takes place in, 38
- Trijaṭā (*rākṣasa* woman), 587; assures Sītā that Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa are alive, 589; dream of, 475–76; reassures Sītā, 589; warns *rākṣasa* women to placate Sītā, 476
- Trijaṭa Gārgya (brahman): Rāma jokes with and gives cow to, 166
- Trikūṭa (mountain) Laṅkā located on, 437, 538, 575, 715, 735
- Trikūṭa (mountain), 583; Hanumān leaps onto, 437, 645; located on southern shore, 734; Rāvaṇa goes to, 745. *See also* Lamba
- Trimūrdhan. *See* Triśiras (2)
- Trimūrti, 34–35
- Triśaṅku: becomes *caṇḍāla*, 110–11; as constellation, 174, 541; curse of, 41; descendant of Ikṣvāku, 109; goes to heaven in bodily form, 122, 252; son of Pṛthu, 122, 252; story of his rise to heaven, 109–12; Vasiṣṭha purohita of, 109–10; Vasiṣṭha and sons refuses to sacrifice for, 109–10; Viśvāmitra performs sacrifice for, 111–12

Triśiras (*rākṣasa* troop leader) (1): attacks Rāma, 294; fights Rāma in Daṇḍaka, 291; Rāma fights and kills, 32, 52, 56, 294–95;—recalled, 300, 652, 677; Rāvaṇa reports death of, to Mārica, 303; vows to kill Rāma, 294

Triśiras (*rākṣasa* troop leader) (2): also called Trimūrdhan, 633–34; exhorts Rāvaṇa, 629; fights Aṅgada, 633; Hanumān fights and kills, 634–35; killing of, recalled, 640, 715; Kumbhakarna paternal uncle of, 628; leads *rākṣasas* into battle, 629–30; son of Rāvaṇa, 630; strikes Hanumān with sword, 634; vows to kill Rāvaṇa's enemies, 629

Tṛṇabindu, ashram of, 729–30; austerities of, 729; daughter of (*see* Tṛṇabindu's daughter); recognizes curse of Pulastya, 730

Tṛṇabindu's daughter: becomes pregnant, 729; gives birth to Viśravas, 730; Pulastya marries, 730; virtues of of, 30

truth-act: of Anaraṇya, 756; of Sitā, 19, 513–14, 843; of Vedavati, 753. *See also* oath; vow

Tumburu (king of *gandharvas*), 228; Bharadvāja invokes, for hospitality to Bharata, 227; cursed by Vaiśravaṇa, 266–67; passion of, for Rambhā, 267

turtle: eating of, by brahmins and kshatriyas, 370

Tvaṣṭṛ (divine craftsman), 663; Bharadvāja invokes, for hospitality to Bharata, 227; Indra cuts off heads of son of, 635; Sudāmana divine weapon of, 80

Umā. *See* Pārvatī

umbrella: as a sign of sovereignty, 167, 178, 228, 249, 323, 337, 340, 353, 360–61, 457, 640; consecrated for *vājapeya*, 178, 853; white color of, as symbol of kingship, 131, 146, 148, 159, 302, 380, 395, 448, 463, 604, 722, 724, 725

universal destruction, fire of, 108, 116, 126, 388, 493, 504, 533, 606, 607, 624, 629, 637, 663, 678, 698, 762, 816, 832. *See also* cosmic destruction

unrighteousness (*adharma*), 5, 17, 20, 37, *passim*

Upendra. *See* Viṣṇu

*upodghāta* (prologue) of *Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*, 4, 6, 9–10, 51–58

Ūrmilā (*gandharva* woman), 85

Ūrmilā (wife of Lakṣmaṇa), Janaka gives, to Lakṣmaṇa, 123, 262; marriage of, 125; wives of Daśaratha welcome, 128

Urvaśī: Pururavas and, 319; story of, and Mītra and Varuṇa, 803–4

Uśanas Kāvya (Bhārgava, Śukra, Uśanas) (preceptor of the demons and constellation) 412, 415, 715; anger of 763; Arajā daughter of, 827–28; ashram of, 827–28; ashram surrounds of, become Janasthāna, 828; Bhārgava, 541, 805–6, 827–28; curses Daṇḍa, 828;—forest, 763;—curses Yayāti, 806, 807; Devayānī daughter of, 805–6; instructs dwellers in his ashram emigrate, 828; orders Arajā to remain near lake, 828; *purohita* of *asuras*, 599;—of Daṇḍa, 827;—of *rākṣasas*, 764; spares area around lake from destruction, 828; tells Rāvaṇa of Indrajit's sacrifices, 764; Viṣṇu kills mother of, 79; wealth of, 412

Utopian realm of “Rāmarājya”, 726–27

*utpiḍā* (unidentified organ), 472

*Uttarakāṇḍa*, 728–855; anomalous events in, 17; Brahmā instructs to listen to (Uttara), 844; categories of narrative material in, 16; cautionary tales in, 17; controversial episodes of, 16, 19; epilogue, 16–17; narrative of childhood of Hanumān in, 16; *rājadharmā* in, 16; reprise of *Rāmāyaṇa* theme, 17; role of Agastya in, 16–17, 19, 26, 29; synopsis of, 16–20; tells history of *rākṣasas* and Rāvaṇa, 16; two bards (Lava and Kuśa) recite, 844; unusual features of, 19

Vaidehī. *See* Sitā

Vaijayanta (city): Nimi founds, 802; south of Ayodhyā, 141

*vaikhānasas* (class of ascetics), 268, 302, 303, 400, 405

Vaiṣṇava form: of Rāma, 854

Vaiṣṇava Hindus, 5n, 34

*vaiṣṇava* sacrifice: of Indra, 775; of Indrajit, 764

Vaiṣṇava theology: *dāsyabhāva* in, 26

Vaiṣṇava theory: of *avatāras* (incarnations), 38

Vaiṣṇava tradition: *Rāmāyaṇa*, as sacred text of, 4–5

Vaiṣṇava works, 35

Vaiśravaṇa. *See* Kubera Vaiśravaṇa

*vaiśya* (social class), 40, 54, 60, 199, 822; born from the thighs of Manu, 280; in list of four social classes, 65, 219, 240, 280, 821, 842; role of, in the *yugas*, 821

Vaitaraṇī (river): river of hell, 325

Vaivasvata (god of death), 111, 200–201, 321, 370, 376, 416, 475, 485, 604, 608, 640, 673, 820, 823; monkeys as sons of, 404;—Gaja, Gavākṣa, Gavaya, Śarabha, Gandhamādana, 564; Nārada goes to heaven with, 760; Rāvaṇa fights, 757–60;—recalled. 613; Rāvaṇa kills warriors

- of, 758; Rāvaṇa resolved to kill, 757; servants of, 644; son of Sūrya, 757. *See also* Dharmarāja; Kāla; Kṛtānta; Manu; Mr̥tyu; Yama
- vājapeya* sacrifice, 178, 764, 845, 853; of Rāma, 726; umbrella consecrated for, 853
- vajra* (decoration), 440
- vajra* (thunderbolt of Indra), 71, 199, 210, *passim*; Hanumān invulnerable to, 786; Indra breaks Hanumān's jaw with, 426, 785;—cuts off mountains' wings with, 433, 519;—kills Vṛtra with, 832;—smashes Diti's fetus with, 99;—strikes Kumbhakarna with, 813
- vajra* (weapon), 80, 289, 441
- Vajra* (weapon-spell), 80, 108
- Vajradamṣṭra* (*rākṣasa*), 443, 546, 547; Rāma pierces, 583
- Vajrajvālā*: wife of Kumbhakarna and granddaughter of Vairocana, 746–47
- Vajramuṣṭi* (*rākṣasa*): son of Mālyavān 734; Mainda fights and kills, 581–82
- vālakhilyas* (class of ascetics), 104, 268, 302–3, 400
- Vālin*: abducts Sugriva's wife, 361–62; acknowledges Rāma as having rightful royal authority, 26; adoptive son of Ṛkṣarajas, 786; alliance of, with Rāvaṇa, 26, 782; Aṅgada cremates, 379;—grieves death of, 379;—salutes, 377; Aṅgada son of (*see* Aṅgada); anger of, at Sugriva, 360–61; apes seek protection of, 377; arrow in, pulled out by Nila, 377; banishes Sugriva, 13, 25, 345–46, 361; becomes like a brother to Rāvaṇa, 782; begs forgiveness from Rāma, 372; captures Rāvaṇa, 26, 781–82; challenges Dundubhi to fight, 362–63; character synopsis of, 25–26; chases Sugriva around the entire earth, 408; confesses sins, 372, 375; cremation of, 375, 378–79; death of, 368–76; death of, as punishment, 371–72; description of, by Sugriva, 362; discourse of, on righteousness and statecraft, 369–70; elder brother and rightful heir, 26, 353, 360; enmity of, with Māyāvin, son of Dundubhi, 360–61;—with Sugriva of, 13, 26, 355–363, 408, 787; exiles Sugriva, 11, 25, 361; fights and kills Dundubhi Mayāvin, 360–63;—recalled, 408; fights Sugriva, 13, 25, 53, 56, 364, 368; flies to four oceans with Rāvaṇa in armpit, 26, 782; freed from sin by punishment, 372; funerary libations for, by Sugriva, 360; funerary rites, of, 378–79; gives Sūgriva golden garland, 376;—sovereignty of monkeys, 376; golden necklace of, 368–69;—Indra gives, 363; golden garland of, 376, 781; Himālaya tells, Dundubhi is fit opponent, 636; hurls Dundubhi's body a league away, 363; instructions of, at death, to Aṅgada, 376; killing of, by Rāma unjust, 370;—controversial, 14, 20, 26;—Rāma justifies, 370–72; kills Dundubhi, 360–61; Kabandha tells Rāma about, 345–46; Mataṅga curses, 363–64;—recalled, 408; monkeys seek protection of, 377; more powerful than Sugriva, 26, 359; orders Sugriva to wait at cavern, 360–61; Rāma consoles, 372; Rāma fails to shoot, 364;—kills, 21, 26, 53, 56, 368, 418, 460, 511;—shoots, from ambush, 13, 25, 56, 364, 368;—vows to kill, 13, 25, 53, 359, 361–62, 486; Rāvaṇa attacks and is defeated by, 16, 26, 27, 30, 781–82;—chases after, 481–82; rebukes Rāma for killing, 26, 369–70; reconciles with Sugriva, 375; rejects Tārā's advice, 367–68; Ṛkṣarajas adoptive father of, 346, 786;—makes, king of monkeys, 786; routs Sugriva, 364; Rumā, daughter-in-law of, 371; *sandhyā* rites of, 781–82; slayer of *dānavas*, 373; source of Tārā's information, 392; scatters blood on Mataṅga's ashram, 363; Sugriva blocks, in cave, 360, 361, 408;—fears, 346, 349, 353, 359, 361;—makes alliance with Rāma to kill, 13, 25, 30, 53, 56, 356–58, 364, 486, 716;—mistreats, 354;—narrates history of conflict with, 13, 53, 358–61;—returns kingdom to, 361;—younger brother of, 353; takes Sugriva's wife, 25, 359, 361; travels the world in fear of, 361; Tārā minister of, 731; Tārā laments for, 374, 376–77, 379;—says blessings and *mantras* for, 368;—wife of, 372; son of Indra, 71, 345, 368; violator of righteousness, 370–71; wives lament for, 374–75
- Vālmiki*, *passim*; agrees to Rāma's request to have Sitā publicly prove her innocence, 841; ascetic, 51, 842; ashram of, 6, 7, 10, 13, 17–19, 32, 38, 40, 794–98, 800, 812–14, 818–19; asks Nārada if there is a truly great man in the world, 9, 51; austerities of, 797, 842; author of *Rāmāyaṇa*, 3; Bharadvāja as disciple of, 54–55; birthday of, restricted holiday, 5; Brahmā grants poetic inspiration to, 4, 9, 39, 55;—instructs, to compose *Rāmāyaṇa*, 55;—praises composition of, 844; visits, 9, 55; brings Sitā to Rāma's *āsvamedha*, 841–42; composes *Rāmāyaṇa*, 6, 9–10,

Vālmiki (*continued*)

55–57, 855; consoles Sitā, 798; contemporary with epic characters and actor in epic drama, 38; creates *śloka* (poetry), 9, 55–56; curses hunter (Niṣāda) in metrical form, 9, 54–55; disciples (bards) of, sing the *Uttara(kāṇḍā)*, 845; —identify, as author of the poem, 841; —recite *Rāmāyaṇa*, 57–58, 839–41, 844; —recite *śloka*, 55;—Rāma acknowledges as sons, 842;—Rāma recognizes, as Sitā's sons, 841 (*see also* Kuśa; Lava); endowed with divine vision, 39; filled with pity at killing of *krauñca* bird, 54; First Poet (Ādikavi), 4; gives amulets to Lava and Kuśa, 813; grief (*śoka*) of, becomes metrical and musical verse (*śloka*), 55; hears story of Rāma from Nārada, 9, 51–54; ignorant of Rāma story prior to Nārada's visit, 38; instructs disciples to perform *Rāmāyaṇa*, 839–40; metrical structure of curse of, 54–55; names Lava and Kuśa, 813; Nārada narrates synopsis of *Rāmāyaṇa* to, 51–54; portrays Rāma, Lakṣmaṇa, Bharata, and Sitā as ideal role models, 20, 22–23; proclaims Sitā's innocence, 797; Rāma instructs Lakṣmaṇa to abandon Sitā at ashram of, 794, 796, 800; —requests, to have the *Uttara (kāṇḍa)* performed, 844; Śatrughna stays over at ashram of, 18, 812, 818; sends disciples to recite *Rāmāyaṇa*, 839–42; shelters Sitā, 17, 797–98; son of Pracetas (Prācetas), 840, 842; sons of Sitā and Rāma born in ashram of, 18, 813; suggests but does not explicitly describe Rāvaṇa as devotee of Śiva, 30; teaches *Rāmāyaṇa* to Lava and Kuśa, his disciples, 6, 10, 57 (*see also* Kuśa; Lava; Vālmiki: disciples (bards) of, sing the *Uttara(kāṇḍā)*); tells story of Mitrasaha Saudāsa, 812–13; testifies to legitimacy of Rāma and Sitā's twin sons, 842; testifies to Sitā's innocence, 842; witnesses killing of *krauñca*, 54; world of, 34

*Vālmiki Rāmāyaṇa*: alternative titles of, 3; Brahmā asks Rāma to hear, 844; cautionary tales in, 17, 18, 24, 41; characters of, animals, 24–25;—Bharata, 23;—construct of binary, 20;—Daśaratha, 23;—Hanumān, 26–27;—Indrajit, 31–32;—Kaikeyī, 24;—Kausalyā, 23–24;—Kumbhakarṇa, 31;—Lakṣmaṇa, 22;—*rākṣasa* women, 32–34;—Rāma, 20–21;—Rāvaṇa, 28–30;—as role models, 5;—Śatrughna, 23;—Sitā, 21–22;—Sugrīva, 25;—Vālin, 25–26;—Vibhiṣaṇa, 30–31; contested history

of, 19; dating of, 3, 8, 34, 38; editions of, 7; emic history of, 34, 37–40; etic history of, 34; general overview of, 3–6; histories of, 34–41; as history, 5, 34–41, 37; history of, contested, 19;—differing perspectives of, 34; as literature poetic composition, 4, 41, 47; as literature, the First Poem (Ādikāvya), 4; *Mahābhārata* and, as sister epics, 47;—comparison between, 20; manuscripts, sub-recensions of, 7; moral and ethical, *dharmasāstra* and—struggle between *dharma* and *adharmā*, 5, 20; narrative of, 8–9; recensions of, 7–9, 40, 44, 45; recitation of, 4, 6, 10, 17, 19, 57–58, 839–41, 844;—by disciples (bards), 839–41;—by Lava and Kuśa, 57–58, 844;—*parāyaṇa* (recitation), 15;—Śatrughna hears, 818–19;—*Sundarakāṇḍa* as starting point for, 15;—Vālmiki teaches to disciples, 6, 10;—versification of, 8; religious history of, 4–5, 34–35, 41; social vision of, 40–41; story of, 9–20; structure, *upodghāta* of, 4, 6, 9–10, 51–58; structure of, meta-narrative of, 4;—meters of, 8–9;—*Sundarakāṇḍa* as *bija* (heart) of, 15;—*Uttarakāṇḍa* as reprise of, 17; synopsis of, by Nārada, 51–54; text, history of, 4, 8, 44; structure of, 8–9; text of, 6–9;—Baroda critical edition of, 6, 8;—books (*kāṇḍas*) of, 9;—size of, 3; textual tradition of, manuscripts of, 7–8;—perishability of manuscripts of, 7; themes and motifs of, 19, 24–26;—curse as, 16; discomfort, 19; titles of, 3–4; translation(s) of, based on various editions, 7;—conventions in, 45–47;—history of current, 44–45;—Princeton University Press, 6; worshiped by Brahmā, 855. *See also* *Rāmāyaṇa* Vāmadeva (minister of Daśaratha), 64 Vāmadeva (priest of Daśaratha), 60, 120, 203, 255; Daśaratha instructs, to install Rāma as prince regent, 133 Vāmadeva (priest of Rāma), 725, 820–21, 837, 841 Vāmanā (*apsaras*), 228 Vāmana (guardian elephant [*diggaḥa*]), 60, 776 Vāmana (sage), 841 *vāmanāvataṛa* (dwarf incarnation) of Viṣṇu, 81–82 *vaṃśa*(s) (royal lineage[s]), 35 *vaṃśāvali*(s) (dynastic list[s]), 36 *vānaras*. *See* monkeys Varāha (mountain): city of Prāgjyotiṣa located on, 403 *varṇa*(s): *See* social classes Varuṇa: and the *apsaras* Urvaśī, 803–4; becomes a *haṃsa*, 754; grants boon to

- haṃsa*, 755;—to Hanumān, 786; goes tomusical recital 762; Mahodara battles, and sons, 762; Rāma compared to, 304, 321; Rāma gives Viṣṇu's bow to, 128; Rāvaṇa battles sons and grandsons of, 761; refused sex by Urvaśī, 803–4; regent of northern quarter, 402; regent of western quarter, 402, 407; releases semen into pot, 804; story of Urvaśī and Mitra and, 803–4; Vasiṣṭha enters semen of Mitra and, 803; as world guardian, 731, 804
- Vāsava. *See* Indra
- Vasiṣṭha: accompanies Daśaratha to Mithilā for weddings, 120; addressed by brahmans upon Daśaratha's death, 203; among few who remain conscious in presence of Rāma Jāmadagnya, 126; ashram of, 104, 798–99; authority in matters of kingship, 217; befriends Viśvāmitra, 105, 117; born from pot of semen, 804; brahman ascetic, 799; brings queen mothers to reunion of sons, 244; consecrates Rāma along with other brahmans, 725; curses Mitrasaha, 813; —Nimi to be disembodied, 803; —Viśvāmitra, 108; Daśaratha instructs, to install Rāma as prince regent, 133; dispatches messengers to Rājagrha, 204; Durvāsa prophesies in ashram of, 798; enters semen of Mitra and Varuṇa, 803; explains origin of the world and lineage of Ikṣvāku, 251; enmity with Viśvāmitra, 11, 103–17; forces of, battle forces of Viśvāmitra, 106–7; gods propitiate, 117; grants permission for Daśaratha to go personally to Rṣyaśṛṅga, 63; Ikṣvāku chooses, as *purohita* at birth, 804; informs Rāma of his impending consecration, 136; instructs Bharata to perform Daśaratha's funerary rites, 213;—Rāma and Sitā prior to the consecration, 136;—Śabalā to produce elegant feast for Viśvāmitra and his army, 105; interprets omens, 125–26; leads brahmans in approving Daśaratha's *aśvamedha*, 64;—the court and *gurus* to Nandigrāma, 257; limits curse of Mitrasaha, 813; names Daśaratha's sons, 71; Nimi chooses, to perform sacrifice, 802;—curses, to be disembodied in return, 893; one of the seven seers, 728; orders arrangements for Daśaratha's *aśvamedha*, 65–66;—Śabalā to produce army, 106; performs ceremony of the wedding thread, 124;—naming ceremony for Daśaratha's four sons, 71;—Rāma's rite of departure (*mahāprasthana*), 853; *purohita* of Bharata, 203–6, 209, 212–14, 218–19, 225–26, 231, 235–36, 239, 243–44, 228, 238, 244, 248, 251, 253, 255, 257, 725;—of Daśaratha, 52, 60, 62–66, 68, 71–73, 75, 120–26, 133, 136–37, 339, 798–99;—of Ikṣvāku, 121, 804;—of the Ikṣvākus, 64, 75, 135, 203, 214;—of Mitrasaha, 812–13;—of Rāma, 723–25, 810–11, 820–21, 837, 841, 850–51, 853;—of Triśaṅku, 109–10, 541; *rākṣasa* in guise of cook, offers, human flesh, 813; *rākṣasa* in the form of, demands meat, 812; rebuffs Triśaṅku, 109; receives new body, 804; recites genealogy of the solar dynasty, 251–52;—lineage of Daśaratha to Janaka, 121–22; refuses to give up Śabalā, 105; reminds Daśaratha of necessity of honoring promise to Viśvāmitra, 75; renders useless weapon-spells of Viśvāmitra, 10, 108; requests new body from Brahmā, 803; Śabala as wish-fulfilling cow of, 105–6; sends messengers to bring Bharata and Śatruḡha back to Ayodhyā, 204; son of Brahmā, 802–3; sons of, curse Triśaṅku, 110;—rebuff Triśaṅku, 109; tells Rāma not to displease subjects, 851; Triśaṅku approaches sons of, 109;—appeals to sons of, 109;—asks, to perform a sacrifice, 109; urges Bharata to accept kingship, 52, 209, 218;—Bharata to undergo consecration, 218;—execution of Lakṣmaṇa, 850;—Rāma to accept kingship, 252–53; visits ashram of Bharadvāja, 225–26; Viśvāmitra demands that, address him as “brahman.” 117;—destroys ashram of, 107;—tries to take wish-fulfilling cow of, by force, 106;—tries to trade for Śabalā, 105–6; welcomes Viśvāmitra, 104
- Vasu: founder of Girivraja, 84; Nṛga consecrates, 801; son of Kuśa, 84
- Vasudā (*gandharva* woman): wife of Mālin, 734
- Vāsudeva. *See* Viṣṇu
- Vasudhā (earth goddess), 734; Rāma rages against, 843. *See also* Dharanī; Mādhavī
- Vāsuki (serpent lord), 594, 690; dwells in Bhogavati, 299, 401, 760; gods and demons use as rope for churning, 97; Rāvaṇa conquers, 299, 545, 760
- Vasus (class of deities), 280, 316, 380, 403, 455, 481, 564, 709, 725, 768, 769, 770, 772, 842
- Vātāpi: Agastya kills, 312; Agastya kills Ilvala and, 276; as demon ram, 275–76; and Ilvala kill brahmans, 275–76; story of, 275–76, 312
- vat of oil: preservation of bodies in, 202, 822

Vāyu (god of wind) (Mātariśvan, Pavana), 46, 75, 525, *passim*; assists Hanumān in leap of ocean, 432; blocks all creatures' vital functions, 784; Brahmā and gods propitiate, 784–85; Brahmā and, in story of Hanumān's birth, 784–85; deprives worlds of breaths, 785; divine father of Hanumān, 426, 783, *passim*; dwells in all beings, 84, 784; gives Rāma golden and pearl necklaces at Indra's command, 725–26; friendship of, with Maināka, 519; gods propitiate, 426; Hanumān invokes, 429; Hanumān son of, *passim*; ordered to enter Śiva's semen, 88; as *prāna*, 84–85; prostrates himself before Brahmā, 785; seduces and is rejected by Kuśanbha's daughters, 84–85, weapon-spell of, called Prathama, 80; weapon-spells of, 627. *See also* Anila; Māruta

vedas, 39, 57, 59, *passim*; according, Manu bore brahmins, kshatriyas, *viaśyas*, and *śūdras*, 280; bow of Śiva consist of, 646; Brahmā primordial knower of, 785; Janaka well-versed in, 65; *rākṣasa* brahmins know, 463; Rāma well-versed in, 51, 72, 482, 484, 561; is ordances of, 709; *Rāmāyaṇa* is equal to, 54; Ṛṣyaṅga learned in, 68; social classes first alluded to in, 40; Sumālin, Mālyavān, and Mālin learned in, 736; take form of brahmins, 853; Tṛṇabindu's daughter overhears recitation of, 730

Vedaśruti (river), 181

Vedavati: ascends to heaven, 753; asceticism of, 752–53; birth of, 753; enters the sacrificial fire, 753; Rāvaṇa seduces, 753; reborn as Sitā, 753; Sitā as reincarnation of, 21, 753–54; story of, 752–54; truth–act of, 16, 753

vedic gods: incarnate themselves as monkeys, 10, 70–71; plead with Viṣṇu to incarnate, 10, 68–69. *See also* gods

verbal abuse of Sitā by Rāma, 15

verse: *śloka* type of, 8, 39, 55, 391

Vibhāṇḍaka (son of Kāśyapa, father of Ṛṣyaṅga), 61–62

Vibhīṣaṇa (brother of Rāvaṇa), 15, 24, 26, *passim*; accompanies Rāma to Ayodhyā, 715–17; advises against hostilities, 547–548;—Rāma to prepare army to fight Kumbhakarna, 614;—Rāma to solicit aid of Samudra, 553;—Rāvaṇa to return Sitā, 547–48; alliance of with Rāma, 5, 15, 56, 551–52, 702; alone can see invisible Indrajit, 585; Anala minister of, 573; Anala eldest daughter of, 489; anointed as *de jure* king of the *rākṣasas*, 552, 561; as anomalous *rākṣasa*, 5, 284; assures

monkeys that Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa are still alive, 591; austerities of 742, 765, 742; balks at performing funerary rites for Rāvaṇa, 702; begs righteousness as boon from Brahmā, 743; birth of, 28–29, 741; boards the Puṣpaka with his ministers, 715; boons of, 743; Brahmā grants, immortality, 743; brings Sitā to Rāma, 705–6; brother of Rāvaṇa, 24, 31, 489, 548, 664, 667, 741, *passim*; cannot kill Indrajit, 668; character synopsis of, 30–31; consecration of, as king of Laṅkā, 15, 53, 553, 702–3; consoles *rākṣasa* women 702; conveys Rāma's instruction to Sitā, 705; declares the killing of Sitā to be illusion, 660; defects to Rāma's camp, 15, 549, 578; denied permission to follow Rāma to heavenly world, 31, 553; dissuades Rāvaṇa from executing Hanumān, 512–13; distraught at sight of bodies of Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 591; does not deviate from righteousness, 742; enters inner apartments of Rāvaṇa to find Sitā, 705; expects unconscious Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, to revive, 586; expresses concern to Rāvaṇa, 764; fights Mitraghna, 581; fraternal conflict of, with Rāvaṇa, 26; Hanumān and Sugriva question, about means of crossing ocean, 552–53; Hanumān and, find Jāmbavān among dead and wounded, 643; has Sitā mount palanquin, 705; holds a fly-whisk at consecration of Rāma, 724–25; honors monkeys with gifts, 714–15; identifies *rākṣasa* warriors for Rāma, 603–4; Indrajit pierces with a hundred arrows, 666;—reviles, as a traitor, 664;—shoots with five arrows, 669; informs Rāvaṇa of abduction of Kumbhinasī (2), 765; invites Rāma to stay in Laṅkā, 713; Jāmbavān asks, why, inquires only about Hanumān, 643; justifies his abandonment of Rāvaṇa, 664; Kaikasī mother of, 741; kills Rāvaṇa's chariot horses, 686; Lakṣmaṇa intervenes to save, 686; marries Saramā, 747; as metaphor for treason, 31; ministers of, gather intelligence on Laṅkā and its forces, 573;—taking form at will as birds, 18, 573; monkeys debate whether to trust, capture, or kill, 549–51;—mistaking, for Indrajit, flee, 590–91; narrates the history of Kumbhakarna, 613; offers Rāma bath and ointments, 713;—Rāma the use of the Puṣpaka, 56, 713; one of seven immortals (*cirajivins*), 31, 742; only virtuous child of Kaikasī, 30, 741; orders area of Sitā's

passage cleared of moneys, apes and *rākṣasas*, 705–6;—Sītā come in full view of the public, 706; paragon of virtue through devotion to Viṣṇu, 30; performs funerary rites for Rāvaṇa, 702; points out banyan tree where Indrajit performs sacrifices, 663–64; points out Indrajit's sacrificial ground to Lakṣmaṇa, 664–65; Praghosa minister of, 573; prevents execution of Hanumān, 512, 523; questions wounded Jāmbavān, 643; rallies monkey army, 586, 590; Rāma accepts gifts from, 703;—declines hospitality of, 714;—gives gifts to, 788;—grants refuge to, and ministers, 551–52;—honors, 575;—instructs, to perform funerary rites for Rāvaṇa, 30, 701–2;—orders Lakṣmaṇa to anoint, as king of *rākṣasas*, 553;—orders to bring Sītā, 705;—orders to rule Laṅkā, 789, 853;—reproaches for clearing area of spectators, 706;—summons, to *āsvamedha*, 838;—tells, he will live on as lord of the *rākṣasas*, 853; Rāvaṇa excoriates as traitor, 31, 548;—falsely tells Sītā that, was captured, 565;—regrets not heeding advice of, 629;—regrets treatment of, 629; reassures Rāma that Sītā cannot have been killed, 660;—Sugriva and monkeys, 642; rebukes Rāvaṇa, 548, 764; rejoices at death of Indrajit, 671; reports the death of Indrajit to Rāma, 672;—to Rāma on Laṅkā's defensive preparations and forces, 31, 573, 603; reviles Indrajit, 664–65; as righteous advisor of Rāvaṇa, 305; as righteous *rākṣasa*, 5, 30, 284, 512, 742, 765; roams the gory battlefield with Hanumān at night, 642–43; Sāmpāti minister of, 573; Śarabha minister of, 573; Saramā wife of, 747; says Indrajit will become visible once his army is annihilated, 662;—sacrifice affords Indrajit his invisibility, 660–61; sends ministers to spy on Rāvaṇa's defensive arrangements, 573; slaughters *rākṣasas* with arrows, 667–68; speaks truth to power, 30; stationed at central encampment, 574; stations monkeys at gates of Laṅkā, 577; suggests telling frightened monkeys that Kumbhakarṇa is a mechanical man, 614; Sugriva reassures, 591; Suseṇa heals, of wounds, 672; takes refuge (*śaraṇam*) with Rāma, 31, 549, 551–52; tells despondent monkeys that Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa are not dead, 642;—Lakṣmaṇa he must stop Indrajit from completing his sacrifice, 660, 664;—monkeys that Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa are

still alive, 586; tells Rāma about Atikāya, 636;—Rāma of Kumbhakarṇa's history and Brahmā's curse, 613–614;—Rāvaṇa of abduction of Kumbhīnasī, 764;—Sītā to do exactly as Rāma says, 70;—Sītā to do exactly as Rāma says, 705; as traitor, 31, 548, 664; unmasks Śuka and Sāraṇa, 556, 562; urges Lakṣmaṇa to attack Indrajit before his sacrifice is completed, 662;—Lakṣmaṇa to kill Indrajit, 666, 668;—on monkeys, 668;—Rāma to abandon grief, 660;—Rāma to send Lakṣmaṇa to kill Indrajit, 660–61;—Rāvaṇa to return Sītā, 489, 547–49, 660; Viśravas exempts, from curse, 29, 741; Viśravas father of, 28–29, 741; vows to help kill the *rākṣasas* and assault Laṅkā, 552; warns Rāvaṇa of his impending death at Lakṣmaṇa's hands, 664–65; weeps for Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 591; wishes to attend Rāma's consecration, 715

Vidhātṛ (the arranger), 158, 278

Vidyujjihva (*dānava*), 29, 33, 746; power of illusion of, 564; produces simulacra of Rāma's head and bow, 564–68; Rāvaṇa kills, 29, 763; Rāvaṇa marries Śūrpaṇakhā to, 746

Vidyunmālin: Suṣeṇa fights and kills, 581–82  
Vidyutkeśa: birth of, 732; Sālakaṭaṅkaṭā wife of, 732

Vijaya (minister of Daśaratha), 60, 204

Vinata (monkey): leader of eastern search party, 398, 407; failure of, to find Sītā, 409

Vinatā (1): mother of Garuḍa and Aruṇa, 280–81 sons of, go by highest path in sky, 419

Vinatā (2) (*rākṣasa* woman): taunts Sītā, 471  
Vindhya (mountain[s]), 394; Hanumān swears by, 489; obeys Agastya, 276; Sāmpāti falls to, 422

violence: Sītā warns Rāma to abjure, 271–72

Virādha (*dānava* or *rākṣasa*), 627; abducts Sītā, 12, 265–67; asks Rāma to bury in grave, 267; boon of, from Brahmā, 266; burial of, 267;—recalled, 719; Kubera Vaiśravaṇa curses, 32, 266–67; parentage of, 266 (*see also* Jaya; Śatahradā); Lakṣmaṇa breaks right arm of, 266; Rāma breaks right arm of, 266; Rāma kills and frees from curse, 52, 266–67;—recalled, 719; Rāma kills recalled, 460, 474, 564, 677, 697, 716, 719; story of 265–67

Virgil, 3

Virocana: Mantharā daughter of, 79; Mṛtyu vows to kill, 759

Virūpākṣa (field marshal of Rāvaṇa), 443; Hanumān fights and kills, 502–3

Virūpākṣa (minister of Rāvaṇa), 729, 744, 769; son of Mālyavān, 734  
Virūpākṣa (one of the elephants who support the earth), 92  
Virūpākṣa (*rākṣasa* hero), 683, 715, 728;  
Rāvaṇa sends forth to battle, 678; Sugrīva fights and kills, 680–81  
Virūpākṣa (son of Rāvaṇa), 547; Lakṣmaṇa fights and kills, 581; Rāvaṇa stations in central camp, 572, 573  
Viśālā (city), 97, 99, 103  
Viṣṇu (Govinda, Hari, Hṛṣīkeśa, Janārdana, Keśava, Madhusūdana, Narāyaṇa, Upendra, Vāsudeva) : Agastya gives Rāma bow of, 278; agrees to gods' plea to incarnate, 10; arrow is primordial body of, 817; asks Brahmā to grant heavenly worlds to devotees, 854;—gods the means of killing Rāvaṇa, 69; battles *rākṣasas* (Hari), 737–38, 740;—Śiva, 127; Bharata as one quarter of, 71; bound by ties of affection to Vṛtra, 831; bow of, 126–28, 278, 295–96; Brahmā calls Rāma, 844, 849, 854;—exhorts Rāma to recall his nature as, 844;—exhorts to return with brothers to essential Vaiṣṇava form, 854;—instructs gods to take on various forms to aid, 70;—reveals to Rāma that he is, in his manifold forms, 709–10; Buddha as *avatāra* (incarnation) of, 21; chooses Daśaratha as father, 69; conch of, 403, 735, 737–40; creates Brahma, 849;—Madhu and Kaiṭabha, 849; curse of Nṛga to end at arrival of, in Kṛṣṇa incarnation (Vāsudeva), 801; declines to kill Vṛtra, 831; discus of, 299, 403; as divinity of Hinduism, 4; divine arrow of, 127–28, 810, 817; drives *rākṣasas* from Laṅkā, 732; dwarf incarnation of, 81–82; essence of, divided between Daśaratha's sons, 70–71; fights and kills Mālin, 738–39; gods appeal to, for means of reviving Indra, 832;—ask, to kill sons of Sukeśa, 735;—perform *aśvamedha* to, for Indra, 833; plead with, to incarnate, 10, 68–69;—request, to end incarnation, 19;—set task for, to take fourfold incarnation to destroy Rāvaṇa, 69;—worship Lakṣmaṇa as fourth part of, 851; history of discus of, 403; horn bow of, 737–38; ignorant of his own divine nature, 10; *avatāra* (incarnation) of, to kill Rāvaṇa, 10; Indra appeals to, to kill Vṛtra, 831;—requests, to kill Rāvaṇa, 768; intended husband of Vedavati, 753; javelin of Mālyavān pierces, 740; judged greater than Śiva, 127; Kāla as son of, 849–50; Kausalyā meditates on, 135 (Janārdana);—

worships, 152; Kausalyā meditates on, 135; kills Bhṛṅgu's wife, 79;—*dānava* Hayagrīva on Cakravān, 403;—Pañcajanya on Cakravān, 403;—Mālin (Hari), 739; Kṛṣṇa as *avatāra* (incarnation) of, 35, 40; Lakmaṇa recalls he is an inconceivable portion of, 608;—returns to his state as quarter of, 851;—and Śatrughna infused with portions of, 71; Māyā is immemorial consort of, 854; Nārada's account of Rāma story makes no explicit reference to Rāma as *avatāra* (incarnation) of, 9; nature of, is to protect all beings, 849; paralyzes Śiva, 127; pierces Mālyavān with javelin (Govinda), 740; plans to divide himself into three parts, 831; pleading of vedic gods with, to incarnate, 10; Prahlāda *asura* devotee of, 30; as “preserver” in the Hindu “trinity,” 34; promises to kill Rāvaṇa and son, 768;—to kill sons of Sukeśa (Janārdana), 735–36, *rākṣasas* abandon Laṅkā in fear of, 731, 740, 744;—believe Rāma is incarnation of, 571–72; Rāma as Hṛṣīkeśa, 709; as incarnation of, 4, 11;—as mighty as, 51;—as one-half of, 71;—enters with brothers into blazing energy of, 854;—glorifies, 137;—and Sitā sleep in sanctuary of, 137;—as slayer of Madhu (Madhusūdana), 128, 709; as Upendra, “younger brother of Indra”, 709; Rāma Jāmadagnya (Paraśurāma) as *avatāra* (incarnation) of, 11, 21;—has bow of, 127;—recognizes Rāma as, 128; Rāvaṇa believes, not equal to him, 753; refuge of the worlds, 854; refuses to kill Rāvaṇa, 768;—Vṛtra, 831; sacrificial post of, 114; sets mind on human incarnation, 849; sets term of incarnation, 849; Śiva tells god to seek refuge with, 735; sleeping of (Keśava), 383; as Supreme Being, 400, 403; takes birth to slaughter *rākṣasas*, 740; three strides of, 400, 418, 424, 426–27, 468, 620; unlike most incarnations of, Rāma remains on earth for long time, 21; role of, in Sagara story (Vāsudeva), 92–93; Vibhiṣaṇa as one of few demon devotees of, 30; wishes to kill Rāvaṇa, 849; vows to kill *rākṣasas* (Hari), 736 yogic power of illusion of, 82  
Viśravas (brahman sage): *agnihotra* rite of, 28, 741; birth of, 730; curses children, 28–29, 741;—Kaikasī, 29, 741; Devavarṇinī wife of, 730; exempts Vibhiṣaṇa from curse, 29; father of Kubera Vaiśravaṇa, 730;—of Kumbhakarṇa, 28–29, 740–41;—of Rāvaṇa, 28–29, 740–41; of Śūpaṇakhā, 741;—of Vibhiṣaṇa, 28–29,

740–41; Kaikasi wife of, 28; son of Pulastya, 28, 730; tells Kubera to abandon Lānkā and found a city on Kailāsa, 745  
Viśvācī (*gandharva* woman), 227  
Viśvadevas, 158, 768, 842  
*viśvajit* rite, 68  
Viśvakarman: artisan of the gods, 734, 747; Bharadvaja invokes, for hospitality to Bharata, 227; builds dwelling for Kubera, 399, 405;—dwelling of Varuṇa on western mountain, 403;—Laṅka, 419, 437, 715, 731, 734;—palace for Agastya, 401;—palaces, 457;—residence for Garuḍa (Vainateya), 399;—sleeping chamber for Kumbhakarṇa 747;—creates ornament Agastya gives to Rāma, 824; fashions Puṣpaka, 446, 714, 770;—Viṣṇu's bow, 126, 278;—Viṣṇu's discus, 403; father of Nala, 15, 554; grants boon to Hanumān, 786;—to Nala, 554, 564; tells *rākṣasas* about Lānkā, 734  
Viśvaksena, 709  
Viśvāmitra: acknowledged as a royal-seer, 109; ashram of, attacked by Mārica, 32, 82–83;—recalled, 305; asks Daśaratha to send Rāma to kill *rākṣasas*, 10, 71–75, 305; attains preeminence among seers, 115;—worlds to which royal seers aspire, 109; attends Rāma's sacrifice, 841; austerities of, 107–17, 841; becomes a brahman-seer, 41, 103, 116–117;—recalled, 72; becomes a seer, 114; conflict of, with Vasiṣṭha, 104–17; creates new constellations, 112; curses Mahodaya and Vasiṣṭha's sons, 111;—own sons, 114;—Rambhā, 116–18; Daśaratha tries to go back on his word to, 73–74; Daśaratha's aid requested by, 305; departs from Mithilā, 125; enmity of, with Vasiṣṭha, 11, 103–17; enraged at Daśaratha's turnabout, 75; genealogy of, 103; Ghṛtācī seduces, 392; gives the Balā and Atibalā mantras to Rāma, 76;—*mantras* to Rāma, 76;—weapon-spells and recovery *mantras* for Kṛśāśvas to Rāma, 80–81; Indra urges, to confer the weapon-spells, sons of Kṛśāśva, 79; instructs Rāma to kill Tātakā, 78–79;—Rāma to save Ahalyā from Gautama's curse, 101; knows how to use divine weapon-spells (*astras*), 75; Lakṣmaṇa accompanies Rāma on journey with, 9, 75–102; Menakā infatuates 115; narrates history of Kāma's ashram and Śiva's burning of Kāma, 76–77;—history of Malada and Karuṣa and the story of Tātakā, 77–78;—stories of various places they pass through, 10, 56, 108;—story of churning of the ocean of milk for nectar

of immortality (*amṛta*), and ensuing war between *daiteyas* and *ādityas*, 97–98;—story of Diti, Indra and the birth of the Mārutas, 97–99;—story of Indra, Gautama and Ahalyā, 100–101;—story of Kuśanābha's daughters and his own lineage, 84–86;—story of Lake Mānasa and the origin of the Sarayū river, 77;—story of the Ashram of the Perfected Being, 81–82;—story of the Dwarf incarnation of Viṣṇu, 81–82;—story of the founding of Viśālā and the lineage of Sumati, 99;—story of the marriage of Śiva and Umā and the birth of Kārtikeya, 87–90;—story of the sons of Sagara, the digging of ocean, descent of the Ganges, 90–97; one of the seven seers, 728; performs sacrifice for Triśaṅku, 111–12; *purohitas* of, unnamed, 105; Rāma accompanies, to Mithilā, 10, 83;—defends sacrifice of, 10, 82–83; Rambhā seduces, 115–16; receives divine weapons from Śiva, 107; reports the reunion of Ahalyā and Gautama to Śatānanda, 103; as royal-seer, 105;—recalled, 72; sacrifice(s) of, *rākṣasas* disrupt, 10, 73–74. 82–83;—lasts for ten nights, 73;—Rāma guards for six nights, 82; sets out with Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 75; Śiva grants weapon-spells to, 107; son of Gādhi, 72, 104–5, 108; sons of, 107; story of career of, 11, 103–7; story of, and Menakā, 115; story of, and Rambhā, 116–18; story of, and Śunaḥśepa, 113–14; story of, and Triśaṅku 110, 111–12; takes Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa to Mithilā to see Janaka's bow, 10–11, 83–108, 118–19; weapon-spells of, divine weapons of, 108; Vasiṣṭha befriends, 117;—renders useless weapon-spells of, 10, 108; visits Daśaratha, 63–64  
vital glow: as sign of life, 586, 589, 824  
Viṭapāvati (capital city of Kubera), 439, 650  
Vivasvant. *See* Sūrya  
vow: of Aṅgada to fast to death, 414, 416; of Añjanā, 426; of Bhagiratha, 95–96; of the Bhārgavas, 126; of Bharata, 224, 253, 383, 810; of Bhrṅgu's wife, 79; of Daśaratha, 169, 719; of great sages, 77; of Hanumān, 853; of Indrajit, 640; of Janaka, 119–20; of Kākutsthas, 125; of Kausalyā, 152; of Kubera, 748; of Pārvatī, 87; of Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, 186; of Rāma, 248, 283, 317, 335, 477, 484, 511, 552–553, 588, 689, 699, 703, 706, 711; of Rāma to slay Vālin, 359, 361; of Rāma and Sītā, 135; of Rāvaṇa, 591, 742, 773; of Satyavati, 86; of Sītā,

vow (*continued*)

- 705; of Śiva, 76 ; of Sugrīva, 416; of Vālmiki, 57; of Vasiṣṭha, 75, 106; of Vibhiṣaṇa, 742; of Viśvāmitra, 114, 116. *See also* oath; truth-act
- Vṛtra, 736, 759, 768, 764, *passim*; *aśvamedha* sacrifice of, 832–33; austerities of, 831; Indra kills, with *vajra*, 831–32; story of Indra and, 830–32
- vulture(s): fifth path in sky, that of, 419. *See also* Jaṭāyus; Sāmpātī
- water-offerings: to ancestors, 76, 87, 241, 242, 283, 379, 419, 420; of Rāvaṇa, 758; known as *sāmvarta*, 846. *See also* funerary libations
- weapon(s), 582, 584–85, 594, 601, 603, 647, 663, 675, 679, 685, 696; as a means of suicide, 454; of fourteen thousand *rākṣāsas*, 292–93; of monkeys, 525; of Rāma to kill golden deer, 312. *See also* arrow(s); bow(s); discus; javelin(s); lance(s); serpent-eapons; sword; *Glossary of Weapons*
- weapon-spells (*astras*), 775; of Agni, 606, 639, 685, 689; of *asuras*, 685; of Brahmā, 482, 493, 523, 639, 641–42, 654, 655, 661; of *gandharvas*, 676, 685; of Garuḍa, 690; of gods, 689; of Indra, 628, 670; of Indrajit, 584, 764; known as *sāmvarta*, 846; of Paśupati (Śiva), 758; Rāma receives from Vivāmitra, 10; Rāvaṇa as master of, 738; of Rudra (Śiva), 626, 684; Sāmhāras know how to use, 75; of Śiva (Paśupati), 764; Śiva gives to Viśvāmitra, 107; sons of Kēśāśva as, 75; of Sūrya, 639, 685; thwart each other, 698; Vasiṣṭha renders useless, of Viśvāmitra, 108; of Vāyu, 627; of *vidyādharas* called Nandana, 80; Viśvāmitra gives, to Rāma, 10, 80–81;—knows how to use, 75; of Yama, 639
- western quarter: description of, 402–4; dispatching of search party to, 402–4, 407; Suśeṇa, leader of, search party, 400, 407
- western search party: dispatching of, to western quarter, 402–4; failure of, to find Sitā, 409; Suśeṇa as leader of, 400, 407
- widow(s): Daśaratha's wives as, 245; exile of king leave earth, 183, 213, 222, 245; Kaikeyī must live as, 175, 244; Laṅkā to become a city of, 329, 474; *rākṣasa* women as, 676, 700; Sitā does not have the signs of, 588;—should not be, 588;—thinks she is, 566; Śūrpaṅakhā as, 33, 763; Tārā as, 374, 377; wives of Vālin as, 379; women abducted by women as, 762; women never become in Rāma's kingdom, 54, 727

- wife/wives: commander of army as, 425; description of consorts of Rāvaṇa and, 29–30, 446–50; of Daśaratha, fasting of, 223;—reunited with him in heaven, 845; of Vālin lament, 374–75;—fast to death of, 375
- wind: ceases to blow during battle between Rāma and Rāvaṇa, 697
- wind god. *See* Vāyu
- wine: *ādityas* accept, 98; *asuras* do not accept, 98; flower, 451; of the gods, 761; *madhu*, 390; *maireya*, 105, 227, 229, 390, 791
- winter. *See* rainy season
- woman/women: abducted by Rāvaṇa, 16, 29, 30; abducted by Rāvaṇa curse him, 763; asceticism of, 797 (*see also* Anasūyā; asceticism; austerities; Śabari; Sitā; Svayamprabhā; Vedavati); *dharma* of, 157–58, 161, 162–63, 172, 197, 109, 260; dress and anoint Sitā, 705; inner apartments of (*see* inner apartments); Laṅkā compared to, 437–38, 440; obedience of, to husbands, 158, 260; prohibition on killing, 215; propriety of, performing *sandhyā* rituals, 458; Rāvaṇa abducts, 62–63; in Vālmiki's ashram, 797. *See also* *apsaras(es)*; *rākṣasa* women; Rāvaṇa: wives and courtesans of, described; *yakṣa* woman/women
- women's quarters. *See* inner apartments
- world guardian(s) (*lokapāla(s)*), 131, 156, 280, 725; Brahmā makes Kubera, 731; Indra as, 731; Kubera as, Rāvaṇa subjugates, 545; Rāvaṇa threatens to send to abode of Yama, 748; Varuṇa as, 731, 804
- Yadu: and Yayāti, 805–7; son of Yayāti and Devayāni, 805; Yayāti curses to father *yātudhānas*, 807; Yayāti loves than Pūru, 805
- yajña* (sacrifice[s]), 40. *See also* sacrifice(s)
- Yajñakopa (*rākṣasa*), 547; Rāma fights, 581; son of Mālyavān, 734
- Yajñaśatru (*rākṣasa*), 291; Rāma strikes, 583
- yakṣa(s)*, 68–69, 74–75, 78, *passim*; Brahmā creates, 732; creatures of the night, 87; etymology of word, 732; Kubera king of, 405; Kubera lives on Kailāsa surrounded by, 545; Rāvaṇa battles Kubera Vaiśravaṇa and, on Kailāsa, 749–51; Viṣṇu tells gods to father sons on, 70. *See also* Māṇibhadra/Māṇicara; Saṃyodhakaṅtaka; Suketu; Sūryabhānu
- yakṣa* woman/women, 734; Rāvaṇa abducts, 762–63 *See also* Tāṭakā
- yak-tail fly whisks: as sign of kingship, 145, 148, 228, 267, 302, 323, 361, 380, 395, 448, 463, 509, 640, 722, 724, 725

- Yama (god of death): becomes a crow, 754; Brahmā protects Rāvaṇa from, 760; grants boon to Hanumān, 786; king of ancestors, 757; Mṛtyu accompanies, in battle against Rāvaṇa, 759–60; must not falsify word of Brahmā, 760; Nārada warns of Rāvaṇa's intentions, 757–58; Rāvaṇa fights, 757–60; regent of southern quarter, 292, 403; rewards crow, 755; vanishes from Rāvaṇa's sight, 760; Vātāpi goes to house of, 276; vows to kill Rāvaṇa, 759–60; weapon-spells of, 639; as world guardian, 731. *See also* Dharmarāja; Kāla; Kṛtānta; Mṛtyu; Vaivasvata
- Yamunā (river), 17, 18, 35, 146, 188, 206, 256, 398, 716, 718, 817, *passim*; Lavaṇa harasses sages who live near, 807–8; Rāma crosses, 190; Śatrughna camps on banks of, 814; Śatrughna. crosses, 815; water for Rāma's consecration brought from confluence of, with Ganges, 146
- yātudhāna*[s] (type of *rākṣasa*): Aṅgada allows, to capture him, 579; battle mon-keys, 605, 625, 631; central encampment of Rāvaṇa garrisoned by, 539; described, 441–42; Khara has army of, 290, 292; engage in vedic recitation, 440; wake up Kumbhakarṇa, 610
- Yavadvīpa (island), 399
- Yavanas (peoples), 106; produced from wish-fulfilling cow, 107
- Yavanas (region): located in northern quarter, 404
- Yayāti: and Yadu, 805–7; consecrates Pūru, 807; curses Yadu to father *yātudhānas*, 807; Devayāni disfavored wife of, 805; enters ashram, 807; exchanges old age with son Pūru, 805–7; Indra and, 339; Pūru younger son of, 805–7; son of Nahuṣa, ascends to Indra's world, 339; story of 805–7; Uśanas Kāvya curses, 806, 807
- Yogavasiṣṭhamahārāmāyaṇa*, 41
- younger brother: Lakṣmaṇa as ideal of, 5, 21
- Yuddhakāṇḍa*, 537–727; descriptions of battles in, 15; longest *kāṇḍa*, 15; synopsis of, 15–16
- Yudhājit: army of, battles *gandharvas*, 846–47; Bharata's maternal uncle, 124, 206–7, 845–46; desires to conquer the country of the *gandharvas*, 845–46; dispatches Gārgya as messenger, 845–46; king of Kekaya and Bharata's maternal uncle, 130; son of king of Kekaya, 124; takes Bharata and Śatrughna to his home, 130
- yuga*(s): determined by the balance of righteousness and unrighteousness, 571; in Hinduism, 4, 32, 37–38; Nārada's account of, 821–22; theory of righteousness (*dharma*) in, 37–38, 821–22; Vedavati born in Kṛta, 753–54; Vedavati reborn as Sītā in Tretā, 753–54. *See also* Dvāpara Yuga; Kali Yuga; Kṛta Yuga; Tīṣya; Tretā Yuga
- Yupākṣa (minister of Rāvaṇa): informs Kumbhakarṇa of the Laṅkā's siege, 612
- Yūpākṣa (Rāvaṇa's field marshal): Hanumān fights and kills, 502–3
- yuvarāja* (heir-apparent/prince regent), 11, 46